

LOVE KNOWS NO COLOUR

Written by: Precious Moloji

introduction

My name is Anathi Ndaba and i am 19 years of Age. I have two little sisters Palesa whose 15 years old and Mbali whose 7 years old. We live in a small shack that's divided by a curtain in the middle separating the kitchen from the bedroom. My father left when i was 6years old he said his going to town but never came back again. My mother doesn't live with us she lives in town with her Pimp boyfriend, Yes my mother is a prostitute although she never told me mara i know because before she got her Pimp boyfriend Bra G she used to come with different

man at home go to her bedroom do the deed and pay. i am the one who takes care of my sisters i had to drop out of school in grade 8 that's standard 6 in order to provide for them. My mom doesn't send us money that often she only sends us money once in every 3months. I know that makes her sound like a bad Mother but she has no choice. Life wasn't always this hard for us we used to live a fancy life in a very rich neighbourhood with my mom and Bra G. Bra G has a lot of money because he has prostitutes working for him, that life we lived was very luxurious i miss it sometimes. It was not until Bra G raped my little sister Palesa that we decided to run away. My mom knows about the incident but she couldn't choose us over Bra G because Bra G swore that he will kill her then hunt us down and kill us too if my mother ever leaves him. After the rape incident i took my sisters and ran away that's how we ended up here living in this informal settlement. My

mother does visit us but not that much because she doesn't want Bra G to know where we live. When we moved in here life was hard for us there was no money coming in sometimes we would go to bed hungry. i didn't know were to go or who to turn too until i met this girl called Smangele mara i call her Sma. she's older than me she's 22. me and her became best friends then we became petty thieves. We steal, we do pickpocketing, we mug, we do all this small crimes you could think off. Sma lives with her boyfriend Mandla who is very useless all he does is steal Sma's money and go buy weed. I'm no gonna be doing this for long I'm just waiting for a rich guy whose gonna save me and my sisters from this life. I woke up Monday morning and cooked soft porridge for my sister's so they can eat before going to school. Where we lived we only had electricity no toilets and no running water. We had to walk 30 minutes to get water from a tank, which was

always full of people cos it was the only tank we had in that area. The informal settlement had about 40 shacks.

[06/17, 09:57] Ron: PART 2 LOVE KNOWS NO COLOR

This sfiso guy turned back all angry and came towards me.

Him: who you calling a dog?

I went and took my knife under my bed.

Me: Please come close!

He looked at Sma.

Sfiso: this girl is crazy!

Sma: sit down sfiso she won't stab you its mostly for scare, kazi put the knife down..

I put the knife on the table,while looking at sfiso

Me: I'll stab you.

Shame he was getting a bit scared

Sfiso: can you put it where I cannot see it.

I took it and put it under the bed.

Sma: kazi please be serious, sfiso we all ears

Sfiso: so as i was saying roxanne is very rich if we get close to her we gonna be rich too..

Me: How do you know her?

Him: she is my sister's Friend.

me: this is a set up!

Him: It's not a set up

Sma: so how do we get close to her?

Sfiso: easy we need someone to hit on her then date her for a while.

Sma: You will date her problem solved.

Him: i wish but unfortunately she's a lesbian.

Then he looked at me.

Him: it means she's into girls incase you don't

know what a lesbian is

Me: ngizokugwaza (ill stab you)

Sma: guys stop it hau.

Sfiso: so one of you will have to do this one.

They both looked at me.

Me: You guys want me to do it? Hell no!

Sma: come on kazi

Me: why me?

Sma: You very smart in such things you can pull it off unlike me i have no experience whatsoever in this lesbian things..

Me: and you think i can pull it off?

Sma: yes so take one for the team.

Me: I'll have to think about it..

Sfiso: let me go while you think about it, and next time when we meet can we please meet at my house.

Sma: why?

Him: i don't like this place, it's not for me. It's too dirty

and looks dangerous

Me: Kazi please let me get my knife!

Sma: phola kazi tuu (relax), okay sfiso we'll come to your house tomorrow..

Him: I'll sms you the address.

They both went out.

Sma: kazi I'll see you later..

Me: Sharp kazi.

I didn't know anything about being a lesbian,so i took out my phone and called my mom she answered after some time.

Her: Anathi i told you that you shouldn't call me! If Bra G can find out..

Me: i don't care about him, i don't need to make an appointment to call you!

Her: i know sweety but we trying to be safe.

Me: fine, we need some money. We have ran out of food and Palesa wants a new phone, mbali needs new shoes for school.

Her: i sent you money what did you do with it?

Me: You sent us R500 which was 3months ago
mama

Her: i don't have money Anathi

Me: Really ma? So what you expect me to do?
This are your kids you should be taking care of
them not me, I'm a kid myself.

Her: i know Nono but you doing a great job with
them and..

I hung up on her this woman was pissing me off.
I sat on the bed crying this was unfair, why
should i be the one taking care of this kids
when will my life start im only 19. After crying i
stood up and went to get fresh air,took a walk. I
heard someone calling my name from behind, i

turned back and it was Scelo. Scelo is 21, he works at spur as a waiter. His always had a thing for me but unfortunately his broke i can't date him. He doesn't live in my area he lives ekasi, he just comes here to visit his friends and to bother me.

Me: Scelo i told you that i can't date you.

Scelo: why vele Anathi?

Me: What am i gonna do with you? You broke!

Him: It's fine Anathi one day I'll be rich

Me: we'll talk when that day comes.

He didn't say anything anymore just went. I kept on walking till i ended up ekasi, then walked back home again. I got home and sat on the stoep thinking. I do think of suicide mara who will i leave my sisters with. I sat there till my sister's came back from school.

Mbali: Ses'Anathi

Me: Hey my dumpling how was school?

Her: it was Good, tomorrow I'm not going to school

Me: why?

Palesa: her school is going on a trip baya e zoo (they going to a zoo)

Me: ohw i forgot about that.

Mbali: Ses'Anathi when will i go to the zoo?.

Me: when we have money my dumpling. Go change your school uniform.

After 5min Palesa came to me..

Her: Anathi there's no bread.

Me: You finished the R20 i gave you this morning?

Her: Ahh Anathi what is R20?

Me: fine I'll make a plan.

I went back inside and washed their uniform with a bar of sunlight soap..

Mbali came to me..

Mbali: Ses'Anathi I'm very hungry

Me: drink water i will buy bread later okay?

Her: okay

I didn't know where i was gonna get cash for bread.. We Sat in the shack the whole day figuring out where to get food, mbali was now crying because of hunger, it was 17:00

Palesa: Ai mbali nawe thula! (mbali keep quiet)

Mbali: I'm hungry

Palesa: Can't you see we still thinking were to get food!

Me: let's go.

Palesa: where are we going?

Me: to get food.

We walked to Ekasi it was getting dark and from our place to ekasi it was an hour walk. I picked up Mbali and held Palesa's hand

because we were crossing a bush. We got to ekasi there was a chesa nyama we went there and sat, waiting for people to at least eat and leave their food. We waited and waited till some guy came in and bought food then sat across us. Mbali was staring at him while he was eating that he noticed and he tossed his plate to mbali and Mbali went for it.

Him: You were hungry neh.

Mbali nodded her head yes.

Him: And you guys don't you want something to eat?

Palesa: we do.

I gave palesa a serious look.

Me: uyaphapha yazi (you're too forward)

Palesa: What? If we hungry we hungry.

Him: It's fine i can buy you food

Me: and wats in it for you?

He laughed a little

Him: What do mean?

Me: You can't buy us food and expect nothing in return.

Him: I'm just trying to help, we all need a good Samaritan.

Me: i don't trust you..

Him: I'm married and i have daughters of my own so as a father it's always my duty to make sure that my daughters are provided for, and seeing you guys this hungry i make it my duty to feed you too..

Me: Spoken like a true father *sarcasm*

He smiled and bought us chips with chicken and rolls, and a cool drink. Palesa and i didn't put ourselves down we went for the kill.

Him: yoooh when was the last time you guys ate?

Palesa: this morning.

We ate after eating he offered to give us a lift.

Me: no thanks we know our way home

Him: It's late and this place is dangerous if this petty gangsters see you girls walking alone they will take advantage.

He had a point crossing that bush at this time of the night is dangerous plus i need to think of my sisters, i agreed to the lift he was driving a Mazda3.

Him: we have to pass by somewhere i have to fetch my daughter..

Me: Okay.

He drove to some house.

Him: don't you guys wanna come in and say hi?

Me: no thanks we'll stay here.

Him: Are you sure?

Me: Yes.

He went in then after a while came out with 3

guys they stood at the gate talking and he was busy pointing at the car. I knew that we in shit here. I tried opening the door it was locked. The Mazda3 guy took out a gun then they came to the car and got us out.

Him: i told you guys that we hit a jackpot tonight.

They told us to get in the house my sisters were starting to get scared..

Me: Can you please let us go

The Mazda3 guy looked at me and laughed..

Him: uyahlanya (you crazy) after buying you food. If you want us to let you go pay me my R150

I kept quiet..

Him: then you guys are gonna pay me in a certain way.

Me: Okay let my sister's go I'll pay the debt.

He looked at them they were crying

Him: okay they can go.

Me: can i talk to them

Him: make it snappy i don't have the whole night.

I pulled them a bit far from them.

Me: Okay guys we gonna run, mbali i want you to run as fast as you can baby do you hear me?

Mbali: I'm scared Ses'Anathi

Me: I'm here sweetie i won't leave you, we gonna run okay, Palesa do you hear me? We gonna run as fast as we can

Palesa: Okay.

Me: now!

We started running, i heard one of the men saying "fuck" the other 2 ran after us the Mazda3 guy went to his car, he was gonna chase us with his car. Mbali fell when i was

trying to get her up the 2 men had caught up with us one punched me and threw me on the ground the other one picked up mbali..mbali was crying and screaming my name when i was trying to get her back the Mazda3 guy had also caught up with us he took out his gun and shot Palesa. My mind froze i didn't know who to help, Palesa or mbali

[06/17, 09:57] Ron: PART 1, LOVE KNOWS NO COLOUR

Me: Palesa are you guys finishing you gonna be Late.

Palesa: ya we finishing. Uhm Anathi..

Me: Ya?

Palesa: I need a new phone

Me: what's wrong with your phone?

Palesa: It's old who still carries a blackberry 8520 yazi my friends even laugh at me.

Me: Palesa i don't have a job uyabona nawe ukuthi kunzima (you see that it's hard)

Palesa: fine I'll just ask Sphiwe to buy me.

Me: Ini? (what)

Her: Nothing

Me: Uyajola Palesa? (are you dating)

Palesa: his just a friend.

Call me strict mara i don't want my little sister dating i want her to focus on her school work so she could get a better job and not be played by this boys.

Me: Friend my left foot! I told you to stop hanging around with boys!

Her: Manje I'm not supposed to have friends?

Me: You can but not male friends.

Someone knocked at the door.

Me: Asikaqedi (we not done)

I went to open the door and it was my friend Sma she was with some boy.

Her: Kazi!

Me: Sho Kazi!

She came in with the guy and they sat down.

Me: Palesa kanti you guys are not finishing hau what are you still doing?

Palesa: we finished, now we have to eat.

Me: there's no time I'll give you money nizobamba amagwinya lapha ka sis'joyce. (I'll

give you money to get vetkoeks at sis'joyce).

My sister Palesa knew what i was doing mara i didn't want them around when i talk business with Sma. I gave them R20 and they started walking out.

Me: Haibo no kisses?

They came to give me kisses.

Palesa: Mara Yazhi Anathi I'm too old to be giving you kisses..

Me: You Still my little sister.

Palesa: Mxm bye

Me: bye

Palesa: and bye Sma

Sma: bye bo sweetie.

They left for school..

Me: And then Kazi were did you get this one from?

Sma: Whoa kazi this is Sifiso he will be joining us his a new member..

I looked at this sfiso person he didn't look like he has it hard. He was even looking around the

shack as if like yooh were am i.

Me: moss Kazi he doesn't look desperate

Sma: his not kazi mara his here to help us nge business you know business has been slow,he knows alot of rich people we can steal from Phela uhlala kuma surbubs (he lives in the suburban area)

I looked at him.

Me: bhuti (brother) what's your story?

Him: story?

Me: Yebo like why ufuna ukuzihlanganisa nathi?

(why you wanna mix yourself with us)

Him: English please..

Me: Mara yi bhari Lento yakho kazi (this thing of yours is a fool)

Sma: don't be like that kazi

Me: he won't survive in this game lo England wakho with his snorbish English!

Sma: give him a chance. Sifiso tell her what you told me.

Him: Okay i have a perfect prey her name is..

Me: before we go far what is a prey?

Sma: Amen!

Sifiso started laughing.

Him: You joking right?

I gave him a serious look.

Me: do you see me laughing?

Phela I dropped out in grade 8 so i was not so smart when it comes to books mara i am very Street Smart..

Sma: ignore her continue.

Him: Okay i know this girl roxanne she comes from a very rich family. She is daddy's girl gets everything she wants her bank balance amounts to 20 000.

Sma: shuuuuu! That's a lot of money.

Me: kazi do you trust this coconut?

Him: Please don't call me a coconut

Me: or what?

He stood up.

Him: sorry Sma i cannot work like this

Sma: come on sfiso

Me: Ai kazi maan let him go! Hamba wena your nja! (you dog)

Yes ask around people will tell you i don't take shit. My mom always told me that I'm stubborn, i don't like fighting but i also don't like people messing with me.

Save

[06/17, 09:57] Ron: PART 3 LOVE KNOW NO COLOR

They took Mbali and put her inside the Mazda and drove off. I ran to Palesa she was crying, and panicking.

Palesa: Anathi get help i don't wanna die, please don't let me die.

Me: You not gonna die.

She was bleeding from her right thigh when i looked that's where she got shot. I started screaming for help some woman came.

Her: Thixo what happened?

Me: Mama please call and ambulance.

Her: i don't have a phone my child

She looked around and people were starring she shouted at them.

Her: Someone call an ambulance kutheni na kanti, nifuna umntu aze asweleke nijongile. (what's wrong with you someone call an ambulance, you want this child to die while you starring).

Some old man came with a car. It was an old Mercedes-Benz car. We quickly put Palesa inside and drove to the nearest hospital. When we got to The hospital the nurses quickly attended us and took her to casualty, she tightly held on to my hand

Palesa: Anathi don't leave

Me

Me: I'll be right here when they done with you pumpkin, I'll be right here.

My hands and t-shirt had Palesa's blood i was even crying now, and pacing around. I took out my phone and sent Sma a call back she called me. I explained everything to her and she said she's coming to the hospital. Palesa had been there for too long now i was starting to get worried. When one of the nurses came out i ran to her, she told me that they still busy with her. Sma came in after 2hours she was looking around as soon as i saw her i ran to her she

hugged me and i cried.

Her: Shhhh sthandwa sami don't cry..

Me: they took Mbali, we have to find mbali.

Her: they took her where?

Me: i don't know i think that house.

Her: Which house? Kazi you not making sense right now.

Me: Kazi let's go wet don't have much time.

Her: where we going?

Me: to the house were they took her..

Her: Kazi i think we need to go to the police station first we cannot go alone to that house wherever it is, it's dangerous.

We started walking out, we tried hiking no car stopped we just had to walk to the police station which was a bit far from the hospital.

We got to The police station at 00:00am. I went up to the cop who was at the reception and

explained everything, they didn't waste my time she called 3 cops and explained then they took me and Sma to the van and we was driving to the house with me directing them. When we got there they told us to stay in the van as it is not safe..

Me: Kazi i pray they find her there

Sma: they will kazi.

After some time the two cops came out with the Mazda guy and his friends cuffed. I let out a big sigh this guys were not smart how can they go back to the Same house especially after kidnapping a 7 year old. The last cop came out with mbali on her hands, she was wrapped in a towel and crying, when i saw her i got out of the car and went to her. I took her and hugged her tight while crying. I noticed that she was naked and bleeding the towel had her blood and i also saw blood in her legs. Sma was already with us i just handed her mbali and went straight to the

guys, sma was busy yelling my name before i made it to them one cop held me back.

Me: What did you do to my sister you scumbags

One replied " we had a lot of fun with her and we don't even regret, that will teach not to call the cops next time" another police van came while i was still held tight and they put them at the back. They were smiling and looking at me while going at the back i couldn't believe this niggas, then we went to the van that we came with and it took us to the hospital, same hospital that Palesa was at. We got there and doctors ran tests on Mbali which was hard because she was crying and fighting not wanting them to touch her. I stayed with mbali at the hospital, the doctor said they gonna keep her there for a day. The nurses allowed me to stay with her in the ward because she was paranoid and crying. Sma was with us the whole time i was greatful to have her as a friend. We chilled in mbali's ward till we passed out.... I

woke up when the sun was out and the other kids in the ward were making noise it was a public hospital, mbali was still sleeping and Sma was sleeping too with her head on her hands and leaning on Mbali's bed for support. I decided to go and check on Palesa the receptionist told me where her ward is but said I should go later during visiting hours, i went and sneaked in she was still sleeping i gently shook her, she opened her eyes.

Me: How you feeling?

Her: like shit.

Me: You'll be fine.

Her: i can't stop thinking about mbali..

Me: she's safe we found her at that house with the cops, she's also here..

Her: did they hurt her?

I looked down and nodded yes..

She put her hands on her face covering her

eyes..

Me: at least she's safe now that's what we have to be grateful for.

Her: She's only 7 Anathi how is she gonna live with this.

Me: we will make sure that this doesn't happen again, I'm never gonna let nobody hurt yall again i promise.

When one of the nurses saw me they came and told me to leave it's not visiting hours yet.

I left and went to Sma and Mbali. Mbali's test results came back and she was clean. Sma and i stayed with them at the hospital until they were discharged after 3 days. I was tired, smelling, and very sleepy. At least sma had some money with her so we would buy biscuits and chips just to keep our stomachs full while we were at the hospital. When they were discharged Sma called sfiso to come fetch us, he showed up after some few hours driving a

Volvo S60. We all went in, we were very tired, sma sat at the front seat and i sat at the back,with my sisters.

Sma: Thank you soo much sfiso for fetching us

Sfiso: It's nothing I'm glad that i could help.

He drove us home but dropped us at the corner.

Me: Thank you sfiso

Him: no problem

We walked to my shack. I still wondered why sfiso wanted to mix with us because he looks like he has it all.

Me: Is that his car?

Sma: Parents.

Me: where did you meet him?

Sma: I'll explain some other time.

When we got to The shack i was shocked to see who was standing at the door it was my mother.

Me: Sma please take Palesa and Mbali inside.

Sma took Palesa and Mbali inside. My mom tried greeting them, Palesa just looked at her and clicked her tongue. When they were inside i went and pushed my mom so hard that she almost fell.

Her: Anathi wenzani (Anathi what are you doing)

I was already in tears.

Me: do you know the pain and the trauma that you put us through? What kind of a mother are you? If you knew that you couldn't take care of us you should've aborted us or gave us away.

She was also in tears.

Her: I'm sorry Anathi.

Me: You sorry? That's all you can say?

Her: What do you want me to do?

Me: i want you to go! And never come back, you can't keep on doing this to us.

Her: But Anathi.

I picked up a brick

Me: Hamba Mimmy(go mimmy) before i do something i will regret.

She didn't say anything anymore she left. I went back inside Palesa and Mbali were in bed sleeping.

Sma: Kazi u right?

(are you alright)

Me: Ya I'm fine, uhm Kazi call Sfiso we need to start working

Her: Kazi are you sure? I mean don't you want to spend more time with your sisters i mean you guys have been through a lot this past days..

Me: i need to feed them kazi, when they wake up they need to find food on the table. So please call Sfiso and meet me here at 8pm.

Her: okay I'll do that let me go and sleep nami I'm tired.

Sma left and i locked the door, then joined my sister's in bed. I woke up later they were still sleeping i went around borrowing cash to buy them food. I finally got R50 i went and bought them eggs and bread. I boiled water and bathe, after that i boiled water for them too. They woke up at 18:00 they bath and i made them food.

Palesa: were did you get cash from?

Me: I'm a hustler..

They finished bathing and came to the table to eat. After eating we just chilled and talked. Sma and sfiso did show up at 8pm. I took my glasses and a cap and wore my orange overall that was written "not guilty" at the back

Me: Palesa I'm going out for a while so please lock the doors.

Palesa: No Anathi..

Me: Palesa listen..

Palesa didn't wanna listen she came to hug me all crying, she even made mbali cry too who came to hold on to my leg.

Me: guys Please.

Palesa: Anathi don't go, what if something happens we can't lose you please don't go.

Mbali: don't leave us Ses'Anathi

I don't know why my sister's where like this today, i mean they used to me going and they would just say bye mara today aii.

Me: Palesa listen

Her: i don't wanna hear it

I wiped her tears

Me: Pali i don't wanna do this but i have too, you know i have to do this for you and Mbali to have a better life. You see us begging for food

almost got us killed. I'll be safe i promise, wena just lock the door and don't open for anyone okay.

Her: Okay, please be safe

Me: i will.

I kissed them and walked out with Mbali still crying. We got to The car.

Sma: so what's the plan?

Me: we need guns.

Sfiso: guns?

Me: Yes we robbing a Chinese restaurant, Kazi do you still keep in touch with that gangster?

Sma had a lot of connections she been in this game more than me.

Her: who? Zoro?

Me: Yes that one

Her: Ya mara we haven't spoken in a while

Me: well you have to contact him because we need guns.

Her: Okay..

We drove to Zorro's place, Sma went it.

Me : i hope he gives her

Sfiso: Can't believe we gonna be holding real guns.

Me: kanti what did you think we do? Don't irritate me wena please.

Sma came out of the house with zorro and a bag, zorro came to the car.

Zorro: if you guys lose my guns I'm gonna catch a case, and my guns don't come for free return them back with 2500

Sma: sure Zorro we'll do that.

Zorro smiled and looked at us

Zorro: Good luck.

He went back to the house and we drove off.

Me: Sfiso drive to that Chinese restaurant in town they open till late

Sma: and now it's not that busy they probably cashing up..

Sfiso: Lord please i don't wanna die, and i don't wanna go to jail..

Me: Kazi mara what did you bring us?

Sma: relax Sfiso when you have a gun you have power.

I looked at this dude he was scared as hell i hope he won't blow this shit up i have 2 sister's i can't go to jail.

[06/17, 09:57] Ron: PART 4 LOVE KNOWS NO COLOR

Sfiso stopped the car halfway and got out all vomiting. Sma and i got out too.

Sma: sfiso are you Okay?

Sfiso: Yes I'm fine, just nerves.

Me: we not gonna be able to pull this off with this Vagina!

Him: Can you stop calling me names?

Me: I'll stop when you actually grow some balls.

Sma: Kazi phola! (relax) this is the biggest heist we've ever done, I'm scared too.

Me: i cannot believe i left home for this!

Sma: let's all calm down and go through the plan again, kazi what do you know about this place?

Me: they make a lot of money they always busy.

Sma: and what else?

Me: that's all

Sma: What about Cameras?

Me: I'm not sure..

Sma: What you mean you not sure?

Me: i didn't check

Sma: Amen! *annoyed*

Sfiso: How do you expect us to rob a place that we have Zero information about, you should've checked it out first.

Me: i didn't think that was important.

Sfiso: so you finding out how the place runs is not important?

Me: for now it's not important.

Sma: Kazi u dom yazi i don't wanna lie to you! (you stupid i don't wanna lie to you).

Me: we have guns what could possibly go wrong?

Sfiso: cops can go wrong!

I looked at sfiso all irritated by his attitude.

Sfiso: even a 3year old knows that you cannot rob a place without checking it out first..

Me: What was that sfiso?

Him: I'm having a conversation with myself I'm not talking to you.

Me: Why are you even here? Kazi we were fine just you and me.

Sma: Kazi we needed a 3rd person

Me: couldn't you get someone else than this guy?

Sma: No i couldn't

Sfiso: i suggest we call it a night and go home this ain't gonna work.

Me: No we gonna make it work.

Sma: so what's your plan Anathi?

Me: i don't have any yet but it we...

Sfiso: I'm going home.

Me: guys Please this will be the last heist i plan, yall can take over on the next heist..

Sma: that sounds fair

Sfiso: and you will stop calling me Names?

Me: Uhm..what's that got to do with the heist?

He started walking to the car.

Me: Okay fine no name calling.

We went back to the car and drove to the Chinese restaurant. It was around 22:00

Me: they closed i think

Sfiso: so what we gonna do? Just go up there and break the door then say hands up this is a sting operation?

Me: Akere wabona Kazi? Then mina I'm not allowed to call him names.

Sma: Ofcause not sfiso, we need a good plan.

We sat there thinking about a plan until something hit my mind.

Me: i have a plan.

Sma: let's hear it

Me: You guys are gonna pretend like you a couple. You guys are gonna fight from down the street all the way to the restaurant then kazi you'll pretend you drunk keep throwing your shoes at their door until one opens then we go in..

Sfiso: That's the most ridiculous plan ever!

Me: Well Einstein do you have a better plan?

Him: No but..

Sma: Thats a good plan might work.

Sfiso: What!.

Sma: follow my lead sfiso.

Sma put on glasses and a wig, then Sfiso put on his hat.

Me: You brought a hat to a heist that's a brilliant way of saying "hey I'm a thug"

Sfiso: This is the reason why I'm gonna go home.

Sma looked at me

Me: sorry.

Sma: follow my lead sfiso and don't forget your gun.

They both went out, i went out too and stood a bit far from the restaurant checking if there's no cops around. They put on their act Sma acted drunk and out of control, sfiso acted like a responsible boyfriend trying to take her home. When they got to The door of the restaurant Sma started taking out her shoes and throwing them at the door busy screaming help she went as far as banging on their sliding door, no one opened. That went on for 10min i was losing hope and so where they. Sma kept on acting crazy until a Chinese man opened and told them to go he already called the cops. If we get a message like that we go were cops are involved we go. Sma backed away but sfiso took out his gun and pointed it at the Chinese

man.

Sfiso: open the door a bit wider and let us in..

I was standing there thinking to myself what the hell is this guy doing! And we can't bail out on him because if shit goes down with the police he knows where we live. So i just went close took out my gun and we all went in. There was no customers just 2 man and a woman and the man who opened the door,they were 4 In total 3men and 1woman. The woman screamed i pointed the gun at her.

Me: there won't be no screaming tonight mam.

Sma got ontop of the table and was busy turning in circles trying to see if everything was fine.

Sma: If anyone tries anything I'm gonna shoot, if someone alerts the cops I'm gonna shoot, if i hear any screaming I'm gonna shoot, make sure that you don't even breath.

Sfiso: Is there a way we can close the view because your sliding door is a see through.

No1 answered.

Me: guys let's just take the cash and go. I took the woman and put the gun on her head, she was crying.

Me: Sfiso get the cash.

Sfiso took one of the man and said they should give us all their money. The man Kept on saying "no money"

Sfiso: What we gonna do? This is gonna draw attention from people who are passing.

Sma went and hit one of the men at the back of his head with the gun and the man fell.

Sma: we are not here to play, where is the money?

I knew Sma would never disappoint me, she was a pro at this.

She pointed the gun at the man that she hit with the gun. The man was on the floor bleeding from where Sma had hit him.

Sma: I'm gonna count to 3, if i get to 3 and there's no money I'm gonna kill him.

This people looked like they didn't understand English. Sma counted when she got to 2 the man on the floor started speaking to the others in Chinese, one of them said "i get the money" Sfiso accompanied him next to the counter he took out a black small bag from the cabinet and gave it to him. Sfiso checked it then looked at him.

Sfiso: Is it all in here?

He answered "yes all there"

Sfiso: guys let's go.

We went out slowly, i took the woman she was our ticket out but i put the gun on her back so people won't see. We walked to the car sfiso

unlocked they went in then i just pushed her and she fell then i went inside and we drove.

Sfiso was all happy.

Me: What you happy about? You almost got us arrested. When you hear the word cops you drop the plan.

Him: i think they were bluffing

Me: even so but next time don't do that...

Him: Yes mam.

We drove to some ground to make sure we weren't followed. We counted the money and it was 8000 we all took 2000 each, then 2000 was for zorro

Me: tell him we'll give him his 500 some other time.

Sma: sure kazi.

Sfiso drove us to our place, we said our goodbyes and he drove home. I got to my shack

at around 01:00 I knocked Palesa asked who it is i said my name then she opened. She gave me a long hug.

I locked the door behind me..

Me: why ain't you sleeping?

Her: was worried about you.

Me: told you I'll be fine,come on let's go to bed.

I took off my overall and put the cash safe and we slept... I woke up the following day bathe then woke them up to bath, they bathe too.

Palesa: Are we going somewhere?

Me: why?

Palesa: You woke us up early on a Saturday morning.

Me: ya we going to town.

I saw mbali smiling..

Me: How's your leg?

Palesa: still the same, I'm just thankful i can walk.

We walked to get a taxi at the high way Palesa was walking slow. We got a taxi and went. We arrived at town and went to shoprite i let them buy anything they wanted. Biscuits, chocolates, and all those sweet things. I felt some joy seeing them enjoying shopping smiling and all that. I even bought mbali shoes. After shopping we went to Romans pizza got some pizza and ate. We went back to the hood at around 14:00 with a lot of plastics.

Palesa: wow we've never had this much grocery, thank you Anathi.

She came to hug me and Mbali came to hug me too. Someone came and knocked i opened and it was our neighbour telling us that there's a meeting it already started. I told Palesa to unpack I'm coming..

Palesa: can we eat the chocolates?

Me: You guys can eat anything you want...

They smiled at me. I walked out and bumped into Sma at the gate.

Her: I came to fetch you for the meeting

Me: wonder what it's about, Phela we've never had meetings before.

We all gathered at some field all residence of zone 4 came to the meeting. Some guy told us that the guests are coming. After a few minutes of waiting a black chrysler 300 stopped near us. A white man came out of it he looked old probably in his late 50s. He was followed by some guy whom i assumed was his son. The son looked very hot, he had that David Beckham hair cut, facial hair but not a lot of it just a lil and nicely trimmed, he had pink lips i couldn't see the colour of his eyes because he was a bit far. He was wearing a White shirt, black suite pants and black shoes. His shirt sleeves were rolled up a bit showing his black classy watch.

Sma: Who is Mr Man..

Me: i don't know.

YooH nigga was wow for a white person. They came close to us. Some elder of our hood introduced them as the Mullers. I kept my eyes on the son all the time..

Sma: If i can only have him for one night only God knows what I'll do to him,look at him he has the looks, perfect body, they don't make them like this anymore..

Me: You and your dirty mind!

The senior Mr Muller stepped closer to us and started talking, my attention was on his son, who was smiling at some comment, and ohh Lord that smile made my knees weak,he ran his hand on his hair, i was in a world of my own. After a while i heard people protesting..

Sma: What the hell! did you that?

Me: HmMMM? Hear what?

Sma: his evicting us, his saying he bought our land and going to start a mine! We have 2months to go!

That brought me back to reality!

[06/17, 09:57] Ron: PART 5 LOVE KNOWS NO COLOUR

People started throwing insults at them, This Mr Muller person was starting to get irritated..

Him: You can behave like hooligans all you want but the fact still remains i bought this land and all of you have 2months to vacate.

Sma: Who the hell does this guy think he is?

I heard a voice from behind saying "you not taking our land, we will even call the police for you if we have too"

Mr Muller: be my guest you can even use my phone! The police will just have you immediately thrown out of this shacks because

this is an informal settlement, you people are living here illegally! This land belongs to the municipality and i bought it. But i don't blame you for not being smart you black!

I felt something moving inside of me, this man was arrogant! I saw the son getting a bit irritated after that comment, he walked to the car..

Mr Muller: I want you baboons out of here in 2months time!

Sma: The only baboon we looking at right now is you!

shouting

He looked at Sma.

Mr Muller: Your ancestor was a baboon, you evolved from monkeys, if you went to school you would know!

People started getting angry they wanted to attack him, he quickly ran to his car, we started

throwing bricks at his car.

Sma: yeses that man is full of it!

Me: do you think he bought our land for real?

Sma: i doubt i think his another chancer.

Me: Ya but his son is hot though.

Sma: he is yena mara Agh they resist.

Me: but yena he didn't say a word.

Sma: he didn't have to say a word you saw how he walked to the car, clearly shows we disgust him.

Me: could be.

We went to Sma's place and found her boyfriend smoking weed.

Sma: Mandla can't i just come back home and find you not smoking?

He didn't reply. He was sitting outside and we went inside.

Sma: i don't know why i still keep up with him

Me: He looks terrible he looks like a hobo

Sma: that's because he has advanced to Nyoape

Me: then Nyoape is not tailored for him.

Sma: Tailored? Wena na where did you hear that word?

Me: I'm not as stupid as you make me out to be.

Sma: Asazi(we don't know) anyway sfiso is coming to fetch us we going to his house he has called a meeting.

Me: meetings after meetings.

Sma: Ya.

She took out her phone started going through it all smiling...

Me: and the smile?.

Her: It's nothing

Me: It can't be nothing so talk

Sma: okay promise you won't judge?

Me: i promise

Her: Sfiso and i... We.. Dating..

I was shocked.

Me: Whaaaat! *screaming*

Her: not so loud kazi

Me: Wow kazi when did this happen?

Her: not so long ago.

Me: and have you slept with him?

Her: kanti who am i?

Me: halala! Hamba kazi and never come back.

Her: You the only one that's remaining now

Me: ai shame me myself and i kazi.. I want a rich guy not a cheese boy like sfiso whose still living off his parents cash...

Sma: Good luck,rich guys are either abusive,

they sick, they cheat, and they old and married i mean sugar Daddy old.

Me: i can't go for a broke guy shame sorry, i want someone whose gonna take care of me and my sisters.

Her: Good luck.

I know that makes me sound like a gold digger but my mother always told me that a broke guy will make my life difficult..

Sma: sfiso just sent me an sms his outside.

We walked out to his parents car which was parked at the corner. We went in and Sma just kissed him.

Sfiso: What you doing?

Sma: relax she knows about us.

Sfiso: Ohh okay. Any comments?

Me: None..

We drove to his place he lived in town. His

house looked very beautiful we went inside. It looked like a 6bedroom house. He sat us in the lounge.

Sfiso: I'll make you guys something to eat.

He looked at Sma.

Sma: I'll help you.

They went to the kitchen. I sat there waiting for them,after some few minutes i heard things falling at the kitchen, i knew that it's going down. Then i heard Sma screaming "Ahhhh Sfiso" my friend is an undercover whore. I stood up and made my way to the bedrooms. I got to his parents bedroom, there was a jewellery box on the dressing table it was opened i went to check it out and there was gold chains, earrings, bracelets i just took them and put them in my bra i didn't take all of them though,and i noticed a watch on of the bed it looked expensive i took it and put it inside my underwear. I went to another bedroom looked like sfiso's bedroom

had a lot of boy things. There was an xbox and some games, that's big to steal. I heard Sma calling i quickly went out and she busted me at the door.

Sma: What are you doing?

Me: nothing was looking for the bathroom.

She gave me a weird look.

Sfiso: food is ready

Me: that's my queue

I Went to the lounge, but i didn't sit down because of the watch. Sma came in after me. Sfiso made us some sandwiches and juice. I ate while standing up.

Sfiso: don't you wanna sit down?

Me: Naa I'm good

Sma looked at me.

Me: So were are your parents?

Him: i don't know. I hardly talk to them...

Me: You the only child?

Him: No i have a brother that's older than me
and a little sister

Me: Okay..

Sfiso: so guys i called you out here to discuss
the lesbian thing.

Me: Sorry i can't be a lesbian

Sma: you not gonna be a lesbian you gonna
pretend to be a lesbian

Me: still i can't.

Sma: why vele?

Me: because just like you I'm also tailored for a
dick, i also wanna scream "Ahh sfiso"

I saw sfiso getting uncomfortable, Sma threw a
sandwich at me..

Sma: mara wena uyaphapha (you very forward)

I just laughed..

Me: ai guys it's late i have to go to my sister's
it's 20:00

Sfiso: and my parents are coming.

We all went to the car, i didn't seat down i just
leaned on their seats.

Sma: Kanti wena what's your problem?

Me: i don't know it's hard sitting down, think i
have an STI

Sfiso: really you had to say that loud?

Me: there's nothing wrong with having an STI.

Sma: she doesn't have an STI she's still pure

Sfiso: pure?

Sma: still a Virgin

Sfiso: Wow so a loud mouth like you is still a
Virgin?

I hit him on his head.

Me: Shut up and keep on driving

Him: do you even have a boyfriend?

Sma: No she doesn't

Sfiso: have you had a boyfriend before?

Me: Yes and i dumped him

Him: why?

Me: was broke, i don't fuck with broke niggas

Him: Gold digger!

I hit him hard on his head again.

Sma: aii maan you guys stop it!

Me: call me a gold digger again.

He dropped us off at the usual spot..

Sma: can you start walking I'll catch up with you.

Me: Sma I've heard you screaming so relax

Sfiso: Mxm bye Sma

He went. Sma start picking up stones and throwing them at me.

Sma: wena mara i wonder were i got you!

I ran while laughing with her running after me.
We got to my place and my sister's were with
my biggest enemy my mom's bf Bra G.

Me: What is he doing here? Mbali, Palesa! Didn't
i say you shouldn't open the door for strangers?

I went to fetch my belt.

Sma: Kazi no don't whoop the kids.

They both ran to hide behind Sma.

I was very mad and screaming.

Me: why don't you guys listen!

Mbali: sorry Ses'Anathi

Palesa: he said he has news about mom.

Me: didn't i say don't open for anyone but me?

Bra G held my hand. I turned back fumbling

Me: don't you dare touch me! Get out before I
do something I'll regret.

I was Still mad at this guy he raped my sister then alienated my mom from us.

Him: I'm not here to fight...

Me: Then what are you here for?

Him: It's your Mom, she's dead.

Save

Rate (39 Ratings)

[06/17, 09:57] Ron: PART 6 LOVE KNOWS NO COLOR

I slowly sat down. I wasn't gonna allow myself to cry, i wasn't gonna allow myself to feel anything for someone who was never there for

us.

Me: so you finally killed her?

Him: don't give me credit, she committed suicide.

Me: my mom wouldn't kill herself.

Him: unfortunately she did, threw herself in front of a speeding car, when i got to the scene her body was messed up i almost couldn't recognise her.

Another part of me wanted to cry, that was a painful death, but another part of me had too much anger.

Me: well since you have delivered your message now see yourself out please.

He took his hat and went out. Palesa and Sma sat down.

Palesa: she's finally gone, that's the best thing God blessed us with by taking her life.

Sma: Hai Palesa! Don't talk like that about your mother!

Palesa: i never had a mother! Anathi has been my mother. (shouting)

Me: calm down Palesa you scaring mbali.

Sma: and wena Kazi do you feel the same way?

Me: i feel nothing kazi. I know that's wrong but this woman never raised us she's like a total stranger.

Sma: sorry kazi

Me: Asiyelapha ka mam'joyce (let's go to mam'joyce)

Sma: soyenzani (what are we going to do)

Me: to buy beers.

I don't drink. alcohol doesn't like me but tonight i felt the need to drink.

Me: Palesa lock the door behind us, ngiyabuya(I'm coming).

I took R100 and we went to Mam'joyce Tarven. Lucky for us she was still open we bought Hansa beers 4 big bottles, and went back to my shack. Palesa opened for us and we went inside and chilled. We drank the whole night till i was very drunk, Sma was also drunk i was too wasted i didn't want anymore. we just threw ourselves on the bed after finishing the last bottle and slept...i was woken up in the morning by Palesa and Mbali.

Palesa: Anathi vuka (Anathi wake up)

I tried Lifting my head up but it was heavy.

Palesa: can we have pocket money?

Me: Ya just take it in my purse, R5 for mbali and R10 for you.

Palesa: Okay thank you.

Me: before you go can you quickly go and buy me i Grand-pa yooh my headache.

She went out to buy me.

Mbali: Ses'Anathi

Me: Yes my dumpling?

Her: bowuphuza?(were you drinking)

Me: no Lala I'm just sick.

She started laughing.

Her: bona uhlanzele umbhede (look you vomited on the bed)

Me: I'll clean.

Palesa came back with 3 Grandpas

Palesa: we leaving

Me: What about my kisses?

Palesa: Tjo while you vomited?

Me: Okay be like that! We'll see were you gonna get pocket money.

Mbali came to kiss me.

Palesa: Eeuw sies!

Me: Mxm hamba wena miss world!

They left. I slowly got out of bed. I had a terrible headache i rushed outside to vomit. I came back after vomiting and drank 2 Grandpas. I woke Sma up.

Her: Aii yini ekseni so? (what's the matter so Early in the morning)

Me: Wake up maan i want to start cleaning.

Her: just a few more minutes.

Me: Nex kazi wake up! And i wanna wash the duvet too.

Her: You a total bore sometimes.

She got up and left. I looked at the duvet it had vomit on it, I didn't know how i was gonna wash it in my state. I forced myself and washed it, then cleaned the house. I boiled water and bathe after all of that. I didn't feel like Eating so I drank the last grandpa and slept...i was woken up by a loud knock on the door it was Sma.

Sma: Kazi open!

I slowly dragged myself to the door. I opened the door she looked like she had been running she was almost out of breath.

Sma: Thatha igoni lakho(take your knife) we have a problem.

Me: ini? (what)

Her: don't ask alot of questions just follow me

I quickly took my knife and followed her. I couldn't believe what i saw, Mr Muller's son was pinned against his car by Mxova and his crew.

Mxova was a thug that lived at zone 5. Me and him we sworn enemies because he wanted me to date him so that we can be bonnie and Clyde run the streets together, rob people and make lots of cash doing petty crimes. when i turned him down that's when we became enemies..

Me: What does he want here, his from zone 5 his not supposed to be in my hood.

We went close to them, it was 3 of them. Mxova

had his knife Against Mr Muller's son, the knife was on his throat.

Mxova: Ngizok'bhodisa nou (ill kill you now) and no one will even miss you!

Mr Muller's son looked so scared.

Me: Not today Mxova.

He took the knife of Mr Muller's son and turned around to look at me.

Mxova: if it's not Anathi! Always a pleasure to see you slavithi! (always a pleasure to see you love)

Me: Ufunani enkambini yami? (what do you want in my hood)

Him: i was taking a walk around and saw this white boy so i thought to myself hey I've caught a white fish today.

Me: ngicela uvaye (please go)

Him: why you defending him? Word is out that

ufuna ukucova lendawo nyana yenu(word is out that he wants to take your hood)

Me: that's none of your business

Him: Eish Anathi unamagama ahlabayo(you have words that wound)

I went and stood next to Mr Muller's son.

Me: Are you alright?

Him: Ya i think so..

Mxova: Entlek vele Anathi ufuna ukumfela lo whitey? (Anathi do you want to die for this guy)

I ignored him, i turned my back on Mxova who was standing behind me and i came face to face with Mr Muller's son.

Me: better get in your car and leave sir

Mxova: I'm talking to you wena Anathi!

I put my hand on my knife in my pocket. Mxova grabbed my hand and turned me around to face him, when i turned around i took out my knife

and stabbed him on his shoulder.

Me: Ang'thanga vaya? (didn't i say go)

His friends came close Sma came close too and took out a gun.

Sma: i think you and your dogs better Leave now mxova.

They saw that they wasn't a match for Sma because they had knives.

Mxova: ayikapheli Anathi! (it's not over Anathi)
Ungalibeki e zone 5 (don't set your foot at zone 5)

They walked away.

Me: and then wena Sma were did you get a gun?

Sma: It's a toy gun but because Mxova Is a fool he didn't notice.

We laughed and started walking, the Nigga grabbed me by my arm.

Him: wait..

I turned around to face him. He took his hand off me.

Him: Sorry Please don't stab me.

I looked at him and oh boy oh boy this guy was fine! His eyes were grey but if you looked closely they looked green, and those pink lips Lord help me.

Him: I just wanted to say thank you for saving my life.

Me: What are you doing here? This is not a place for you.

Him: I'm working on the mine plan, I'm sure you saw me with my God-Father.

Me: ohh so it's you who wants to take our land.

He smiled a lil, and he had the most beautiful, sexual seductive smile ever, that's if i put the words right because it was indescribable.

Him: It's nothing like that. Look..

He took out a card.

Him: This is my business card has all my info if you ever need anything call me I'll return the favour.

He handed me the card i took it.

Him: Please don't throw it away use it.

Sma came close.

Sma: she'll definitely call you.

He smiled and got into his car then lowered the car window.

Him: Thank you again.

Then he drove off. Sma started jumping up and down.

Me: Aii wena calm down.

Sma: kazi uyak'funa lo brother wama suit (kazi this brother wants you)

Me: Yeah right.

Sma: Yes he does!

Me: Well too bad because he drives a polo

Sma: so?

Me: Akuna future lapha kazi (there's no future there kazi)

Sma: Aii you and your rich guys mentality. Let me go I'll see you later.

She went to her place and i went to mine.

I sat down starring at the card, had his name and surname and his phone numbers.

Me: Riley muller,what a name.

I went to sleep again still had the hangover, but before i slept I thought about this Riley guy couldn't get his picture out of my mind, i found myself smiling alone. I closed my eyes and pictured him with that cute smile of his and those eyes, and those lips i felt myself getting a bit horny. I started having sexual fantasies imagining me and him in bed i slowly put my

hand in my jeans, then i stopped myself.

Me: Anathi Ndaba what are you doing!

I was feeling very horny by now i decided to bath again then went to take a walk, get my mind off this guy.

I came back home after a few hours and found mbali at the door.

Me: where's Palesa?

Mbali: she went to zone 5 with her friend.

Me: What friend?

Mbali: she said i shouldn't tell you.

Me: mbali which friend?

She kept quiet.

Me: Aii mbali Phela ngizok'shaya (mbali I'll hit you)

Mbali: Sphiwe

Sphiwe was Mxova's little brother, him and

Palesa goes to the same school.

Me: mara u Palesa Akezwa!

(Palesa doesn't listen)

We went inside and waited for her, she didn't show up. It was starting to get late it was 18:00 and i was very furious. I went to Sma and asked her to look after Mbali while i fetch Palesa. I went to zone 5 looking for her, couldn't find her, then when i was about to give up i saw her, Sphiwe and Mxova approaching me. When they got close she looked scared.

Me: You don't listen neh?

Her: Sorry Anathi.

Me: What are you doing at a boy's house Palesa till this late?

Palesa: We were studying..

Me: Don't lie to me wena maan i wasn't born yesterday.

She was tearing up now.

Mxova: Didn't i say don't come here?

Me: Mxova im not here for a goosta (fight) I'm here to fetch my sister.

He laughed.

Him: but i told you not to come here! For the fact that you here means there's blood that needs to spill.

Me: Look I'm not here for a fight ang'phethanga nane goni (i don't even have my knife)

He just punched me hard, did this guy forgot that im a girl..

Sphiwe: Mxova stop..

Mxova: Voetsek wena stay out of this.

Me: i don't wanna fight Mxova..

He pushed me to the ground.

Palesa was crying by now.

I moved backwards while i was still on the ground like that looking around for something i could hit him with, there was nothing so i just took a handful of soil and threw it In his face. He backed away all saying 'I'm gonna kill you' i went up to him and kicked him on his tummy he fell on the ground. I grabbed Palesa's hand and we started running. Unfortunately i wasn't gifted in running, Mxova ran after us we were a distance from him until he caught up to us and grabbed me by my hand,i figured my kick wasn't hard enough

Him: I'm not gonna lose to a girl.

He took out his knife and stabbed me on my back

Palesa was screaming, then he ran away. I put my hand on my back not believing what just happened, Palesa came to me.

Her: Ohhh my God you bleeding Anathi!

I went down with her holding Me and screaming

“help”

Save

Rate (39 Ratings)

[06/17, 09:57] Ron: PART 7 LOVE KNOWS NO COLOR

I was getting cold, Palesa took off her blazer and put it on me.

Her: just hang on Anathi the Ambulance is on the way.

I couldn't keep up anymore i felt this heavy sleepiness come over Me i just closed my eyes. I didn't know what happened after but i woke up in a hospital with Palesa and Sma next to me.

Me: Wha..

My throat was very dry and scratchy.

Sma: Palesa she's awake go call the doctor.

Kazi don't talk

Palesa came back with the doctor.

Doctor: Good morning Miss Ndaba do you know where you are?

Me: Hospital?

Him: Yes you got stabbed, you very lucky the knife missed your spine with a few inches.

Yes! I remembered that son of a b**** stabbing me. While we were still talking a man walked in.

Doctor: Miss Ndaba this is detective Lekubu his here to take your statement.

Me: What statement?

Lekubu : of the person who stabbed you, your sister already told me her side of the story, already gave us a name his name is Mxolisi but

known as Mxova is that right?

Me: i don't know what you talking about

Him: don't you remember the incident?

I kept quiet.

Palesa: Anathi don't you remember Mxo..

I gave her an intimidating look, she kept quiet.

Police officer: if you remember anything please call me here's my number.

He gave me a card with his number and left. I took the card and teared it up.

Me: doctor when can i go home?

Doctor: You can go home Tomorrow that's if you feeling well.

Me: I'm feeling better already.

Doctor: okay I'll come check up on you tomorrow before you leave

Me: Okay thank you.

He smiled at me and left.

Sma: why didn't you have that bastard arrested?

Me: Palesa can you please leave i don't wanna see your face tight now.

She didn't say anything especially seeing the mood I was in,she walked out.

Me: because i want to take care of this thing on my own, i wanna kill that Bastard!

Sma: Hai Kazi since when do we kill?

Me: since he stabbed me, and since his fucken brother fucked my sister!

Ever since Palesa got raped when she was young the thought of another nigga sleeping with her just unleashes a beast inside of me. Sma chilled with me for a couple of hours and left. Nurse came with my food and told me to eat so i can drink my pills. I ate a few spoons then drank my pills.

I went to shower then sat in bed thinking About

Mxova, he has went to far i can't wait to show him who runs that hood the can only be one thug and that's me. I don't know why i had soo much anger but probably could be connected to my mom.....the following day i woke up and bathe, i was still in pain and my legs were a bit stiff, the nurse came to clean my wound and changed my bandage,i was served breakfast then drank my pills after. The doctor came in with Sma, Sma had a bag with her got me clean clothes. The doctor asked me how I'm feeling told him I'm fine then wrote me a prescription to go get pain killers at the dispensery. I went and changed to my clothes that Sma brought me and we went to fetch my medication at the dispensery then got a cab home. The taxi dropped us at the corner i looked at my phone it was 10am, Sma held me and helped me walk to my place. We got there she unlocked and we got in.

Me: i need you to contact Zorro I need a gun.

She looked at me.

Me: I don't need a lecture just get me the gun.

Her: No need i didn't return the guns that day.

Me: why?

Her: Zorro is arrested so we get to keep the guns for a while Ohhh and remind me to give you a share of that 2000 we were supposed to give him.

Me: Please go get them now.

She went to her place to go get the gun and the cash. I sat there thinking tonight I'm going to unite Mxova with his ancestors. While i was in my thoughts i noticed the card that Riley gave me i took it and thought of him, i started smiling. While i was in my thoughts I heard someone opening the door i quickly put the card in my bra. It was Sma opening the door, she came in and locked the door then gave me R1000 and the gun. The gun had a police batch on it.

Me: was this gun owned by a cop?

Her: i think so.

Me: help me go to bed this pills are making me drowsy.

She helped me get in bed and i slept...i woke up in the afternoon and sat up straight, when mbali saw me she came running to hug me.

Mbali: Ses'Anathi

Me: my dumpling

Her: i missed you

Me: i missed you too,how was school?

Her: it was okay.

I looked around and There was no Palesa.

Me: were is Palesa?

Sma: she's not back yet from school.

I looked at my phone and it was 16:00

Me: It's 16:00, school comes out at 14:00

Sma: probably she's held up somewhere.

Me: No she's with that damn Sphiwe! Palesa really want me to kill someone before she listens!

Me: Mbali get off me i wanna get out of bed.

Mbali rolled to the side, I got out of bed so fast that i hurt myself.

Me: Ahhh!

Sma: Take it easy Bruce Lee.

I stood up and when i started walking i felt a sharp pain where i got stabbed,i went and sat on the chair..

Me: Sma get me my pain killers.

Sma came with my pain killers, and i drank 2.

Sma: You need to relax

Me: How can i relax when my sister is sleeping with my enemy!

Sma: she's sleeping with Mxova?

Me: no the brother!

The door opened when we were still talking and it was Palesa with Sphiwe, they came in.

Sphiwe: Good evening, i brought Palesa home.

The nerve! His brother stabs me and he has the nerve to show up at my place.

Me: What are you doing here?

Him: I wanted to m..

I stood up and took my gun.

Me: Palesa is 15, she has a bright future ahead of her and wena you busy Disturbing her.

Sma: Kazi..

Me: Kazi ngicela ungazingeni.

(kazi don't interfere please)

I went towards him and Palesa came to his rescue and stood In between us.

Me: Palesa get out of my way!

Palesa: Anathi Please don't hurt him..

Sphiwe: It's fine baby let her do whatever she wants to do.

Imagine this guy calling my sister baby! Right in front of Me. I Lost it and pushed Palesa out the way she fell and hurt her leg where she got shot because she wasn't healed. I hit Sphiwe on his head with the gun that he started bleeding. Mbali was now screaming, Sma was busy yelling at me to stop. I dragged him out while kicking him hard he was Apologizing i left him at the gate.

Me: let this be a message to your brother!

The sharp pain got worse I think it was because of how i was kicking Sphiwe. I walked inside, Palesa was on the floor crying, Sma was sitting down holding mbali who was also crying. I put the gun on the table, it hurt seeing my sisters crying like that because of me. I went to Palesa tried to help her get up but she just pushed me

away.

Her: don't touch me Anathi i hate you right now!

I went to Mbali..

Me: my dumpling come to Ses'Anathi

She just held on to Sma.

Sma: i think you should give them some space a little.

I took the gun on the table put it in my waist and went out, i walked to the bushes while crying. I sat on a big rock crying thinking about my mother, hating her soo much because if she was a good mother none of this would've happened, i wasn't gonna be a thug at 19 and looking after my sisters. I took out the gun and put it on my head wanting to pull the trigger but i couldn't pull the trigger, if i kill myself whose gonna protect and provide for my sisters. I sat there till it was dark then i walked back home, when i was approaching the shacks i saw a

horrifying sight, Red ants were evicting people and destroying their shacks. I ran to our shack, i was feeling a lot of pain as i was running i put my hand were i got stabbed and looked at my hand again i was bleeding, i was in a lot of pain but i kept on thinking of my sister's. When i got home they were standing at the gate with our bags and the red ants were destroying our shack. They ran to me when they saw me.

Palesa: Anathi Please don't try anything stupid this people will hurt you.

Me: but what about our clothes and our valuable things?

Palesa: i have everything in this bags.

Me: Fine.

I tried picking Mbali up but the pain was tense.

Me: Where is Sma?

Palesa: she went to her shack.

Me:let's go to her.

We walked to Sma's shack i helped Palesa with our bags . we found Sma standing there with a bag.

Sma: Yoh Kazi the mine situation has started.

Me: i thought nigga was giving us 2months

Sma: his evil!

he got us evicted

Me: It's 19:00 were we gonna go?

While I said that sfiso showed up with his parents car.

Me: Thank God.

We all went to him.

Him: uhm i can't take all of you sorry

Sma: why? I told you that there's 4 of us

Him: my parents agreed on one person so Sma let's go.

Me: Mxm Voetsek wena sfiso just go we'll see

ourselves right kazi?

Sma kept quiet

Me: Kazi?

Her: Sorry kazi but..

Me: Wow Sma you doing this to us? Thought we were friends till the end.

Her: we are..

Me: so why you choosing him over us?

Her: Sorry i can't be homeless

Ya neh indeed when days are dark friends are few.

Me: fine go

Her: I'm really s..

Me: just go!

She went and got in the car and sviso went, leaving us there.

Palesa: What we gonna do Anathi?

Me: I'll make a plan.

We started walking till we got to ekasi, my bleeding was too much and making me dizzy i had to sit down.

Palesa: You bleeding

Me: I'll be fine..

I put my hand on my chest then felt something in my bra, i took it out and it was Riley's card. I took it out and asked Palesa for her phone. I called him and explained what happened, he asked where we are i told him he said his coming. I was getting weak and dizzy.

Palesa's phone rang, it was Riley asking for directions again and asking what we wearing all that i heard from Palesa explaining to him and giving him directions again.

Me: Palesa i can't hold on anymore, i don't think his coming.

Palesa was crying.

Her: Hold on Anathi he will come... God please don't take my sister she's all i have.

Then suddenly a white Audi R8 stopped close to us. Riley came out, i smiled. I stood up to meet him halfway, he walked to my direction. I was struggling to walk a bit with my hand on my back were i got stabbed. We finally met, i couldn't stand on my feet anymore i was about to collapse he held me on my waist, and tried to make me stand up straight while supporting me on my back, it was as if like we hugging.

Me: I'm glad you came.

Then i just rested my head on his chest. Although i was weak and all that but the smell of his cologne damn it intoxicated me.

Save

Rate (35 Ratings)

[06/17, 09:57] Ron: PART 8 LOVE KNOWS NO COLOR

Riley picked me up and put me in his car, then went to get my sisters. He put our bags in the trunk of his car unfortunately since it was a 2 seater Palesa and i had to share a seat, then Mbali sat on Riley's lap while he was driving. There way i was soo weak i truly thought i was gonna die. He took me to a hospital, quickly carried me inside they put me in a wheelchair, the last thing i saw was just bright lights and i passed out.....i opened my eyes and looked around heard voices then i looked next to me it was Riley and Mbali, Riley was busy tickling her and she was laughing.

Me: Mbali..

Riley: Hey look whose up.

I was Still a bit dizzy.

The doctor came in..

Doctor: and our patient is awake..

Me: Mbali were is Palesa?

Riley: she went to get something to drink.

Doctor: Are you feeling any better?

Me: just still a bit dizzy.

Riley: can i take her home tonight doctor?

Doctor: i don't think so i want to keep her here for a few days

Riley: did you find anything wrong with her?

Doctor: No she just lost a lot of blood.

Riley: Then since there's nothing wrong with her, i really wanna take her home please..

Doctor: Okay but make sure she eats healthy lots of fruits and meat, i would like to see her

after 3 days.

Riley: I'll make sure she comes

Doctor: let me give her another IV therapy (drip) so she can regain more strength, make sure she eats food that will make her produce more blood.

Riley: I'll do that doctor.

The doctor left and Palesa came in with 2 cans of coke, she came to hug me when she saw me awake.

Palesa: I'm glad you back.

Me: don't squeeze me to tight.

Her: sorry.

The nurse came to give me another IV therapy.

Riley: let me make a quick call excuse me.

He went out then Palesa looked at me.

Me: What?

Palesa: he is soo handsome where did you get him?

Me: Ahh we met in a weird way

Palesa: i think i like him he will make a good brother in law.

Me: hai wena hau we not dating.

Her: not yet.

Riley came back in, this guy was soo mad fine i couldn't even look him in the eye.

It was time to leave, the nurse got me a wheelchair then Riley pushed me.

Me: this is totally unnecessary.

Riley: we not taking chances.

He pushed me out of the door and we were approached by some white girl. She was wearing brown cabri pants, with a matching t-shirt, black all-star and a cap. She came and gave Riley a hug then a kiss on his cheek, i

won't lie i felt a bit jealous.

Riley: Thank you for coming Jamie.

Jamie: Anything for you.

Riley: Guys this is Jamie, and Jamie this is....

Palesa: Palesa.

Mbali: Mbali.

Me: Anathi.

Riley: There you go.

Jamie: Nice meeting you guys. So whose riding with me?

Riley: You can take the girls and the patient will ride with me.

Jamie: okay girls let's get moving..

Me: wait were you taking my sisters?

Riley: relax Jamie is taking them to my place, my car is a two seater i saw how cramped up yall were so i called Jamie.

Me: if you think I'm gonna let my sisters ride with your girlfriend you wrong

He giggled.

Riley: Jamie is not my girlfriend

Me: i don't know Her.

Him: You think I can have your sister's kidnapped?

Me: i don't trust Jamie, i don't even know her.

Riley: It's okay Jamie thank you for coming.

Jamie gave him a hug again and left,we went to Riley's car and squeezed ourselves there again. We drove to his place which was an hour from the hospital,we drove to some parking he parked his car then we went to an elevator that dropped us at his door, and the house was soo beautiful,i walked in and looked around i even heard Palesa saying "wow".

Riley: welcome to my penthouse

Palesa: You bought this place, looks expensive..

Riley: No I'm renting it, you guys can make yourselves feel at home while i fetch your bags

Palesa: wow you have to be balling to live here

Me: and here i was thinking that this guy is broke, i wonder what he does.

We sat on his long black couch waiting for him to come back.

He came with our bags.

Him: bedrooms are upstairs, uhm Andy are you gonna be able to climb the stairs?

Me: Anny?

Him: Sorry i find your name hard to pronounce

I hope that ain't a name that belongs to one of his girlfriends. I don't know why I was soo jealous. We walked up the stairs and ya it was a bit hard to walk up the stairs. He opened one bedroom.

Him: This is where the girls will sleep.

Then he took me to another bedroom..

Him: And this is where you'll sleep

The room looked beautiful and smelled of his cologne.

Me: and where will you sleep?

Him: I'll take the couch

Me: is this your bedroom?

Him: Yes it is.

Me: I'll sleep with my sister's so you can have your bedroom.

Him: You injured you have to sleep alone.

Me: No really it's fine

I walked out and he pulled me back by my hand and our eyes met.

Him: Are you always this stubborn?

I looked away.

Me: I'm not stubborn.

Him: then you sleeping here.

Me: It's fine.

My sister's came into the bedroom, and he let go of my hand..

Palesa: i like the bedroom uncle Riley..

Uncle Riley? Hebanna this kids are too forward.

Riley: I'm glad you guys like it, why don't we go make popcorns and watch movies.

Palesa smiled.

Palesa: I'd like that, do you have horror movies?

Him: i have everything cup cake.

Palesa: Aichhh I'm gonna enjoy living here.

Riley: why don't you guys go downstairs so long there's ice cream in the freezer I'll come and do the popcorns.

Palesa: okay.. Hey mbali I'll race you

downstairs,let's see whose gonna arrive first

They started running..

Me: No running Palesa remember you have a leg injury *shouting*

They stopped running.

Me: Eish this kids, sorry about that.

Riley: Ahh it's nothing kids will be kids.

Me: they don't listen.

He giggled a little. Then there was an awkward silence between us, i decided to break the ice.

Me: uhm should we go watch the movie.

I walked out, he got me back inside.

Him: were do you think you going?

Me: To watch a movie

Him: No we watching movies and you are sleeping

Me: I'm not sleepy

Him: i don't wanna get in trouble with the doctor, you have to rest so you on bed rest.

Me: bed rest?

Him: Yes come on snuggle bunny, get your sexy little behind in bed

I blushed a little, so he has been checking me out. Yes i have a bit of an ass and curves God blessed me in that Area but he forgot to bless me in the breast department. I walked my sexy little behind in bed.

Him: You not getting in fully clothed.

He went to his wardrobe and got me a basket ball t-shirt.

Him: wear this..

I took the t-shirt went to wear in the bathroom, was a bit short i was uncomfortable with him seeing me half naked, i went back to the bedroom, and he looked at me with his mouth open.

Me: is there anything else i could wear that's a bit longer?

He just shook his head no. I quickly went and got in bed he pulled the duvet up to my neck.

Him: You want me to tell you a bad time story?

I laughed.

Me: no.

Him: Wow so you can laugh?

I was already blushing.

Me: just get out nigga!

Him: You can't call me a nigga I'm white.

Me: You racist.

Him: And so are you.

I laughed and looked away avoiding to make eye contact.

Him: Good night I'll see you tomorrow.

Me: night.

He switched off the light and went. I smiled and closed my eyes, eish this guy gave me butterflies in my tummy... I woke up in the morning, went to the bathroom to wash my face and looked for my toothbrush in my bag and brushed my teeth. I put on my short and walked downstairs, shame Riley passed out on the couch with Palesa and Mbali sleeping on his chest and the Tv was on, it was a beautiful picture though i smiled. I didn't wanna wake them up i started walking upstairs, i heard a voice saying "Good morning snuggle bunny"

I knew it was Riley so i turned around. He woke Palesa and Mbali up to go sleep in the bedroom, they were still very sleepy they just went upstairs.

Me: at what time did you guys pass out?

He came close to me all yawning, with his sleepy cute eyes and my God! he still looked handsome, i still couldn't make eye contact with

him something about his eyes and smile that made my knees weak,i have had boyfriends before but none of them made me feel like this.

Him: i think at around 2am..

Me: Why don't you go and sleep.

Him: No why are you out of bed?

Me: because i can't stay in bed forever

Him: no you gonna stay in bed until the doctor says you fine when we go for your next appointment

Me: Riley I'm tired of being in bed..

Him: Nope i ain't hearing none of that go back to bed, I'm not laughing with you right now.

I went upstairs ,busy complaining.

Him: am i hearing you complaining? Ima make you stay in bed for 2 weeks.

Me: What?

Him: Still complaining?

Me: 2 weeks is...

Him: make that 3 weeks.

Me: Now you..

Him: Still complaining?

I just shook my head no,he smiled at me.

Him: Good.

Life at Riley's place was very nice, my sisters enjoyed staying there so did I mbali was very fond of Riley and Riley was fond of her too, Riley made sure we get everything we wanted including clothes, it was now a week since we moved in, me and him we were even getting close he even suggested that Palesa and Mbali should be transferred to schools that are closer to were we lived, i still didn't know what he did though i never asked and he never told. I felt safe with him, i felt complete, he was my weakness and brought a softer side of me that i didn't even know existed. i even forgot about

my previous life until one Monday morning when i was woken up by a phone call from Sma, i wondered what she wanted.

Me: What?

Sma: is that the way to greet your besty?

Me: What do you want Sma?

Her: Still mad about what happened?

Me: No,all I'm asking is what you want?

Her: word is out Mxova is looking for you

Me: well sad for him he won't find Me, and I'm not about that life anymore

Her: You don't know how serious this is, he knows were you are and he has joined forces with the crew from zone 6

Me: What you mean he knows were i am..

Her: i don't know how but he knows were you are and he's threatening to come and do damage there.

Me: Shit! How the hell did he find me.

Sma: You know he has contacts almost everywhere.

Me: Eish this guy won't give up!

Sma: so I'm thinking we should surprise him tonight unexpectedly

Me: that's not a bad idea just teach him a little lesson..

Sma: exactly so we'll see you tonight

Me: Alright

Sma: Kazi..

Me: huh?

Her: It's good to have you back in the game.

Me: yea.

I hung up. And started looking for my gun, shit the last time i saw it was before i went to the hospital, I hope the hospital didn't have it. I went downstairs and Riley wasn't around with the

girls just left a note that they at the mall. I slept again to gather my strength... I woke up after a few hours went downstairs they still wasn't back, i called Palesa she said they still at the mall... They came back at around 15:00 i was bored as hell without them. I pulled Palesa aside to ask about my gun she said she don't know were it is. Riley went out to run some errands. We cooked dinner and ate then after watched tv. At around 21:00 Palesa and Mbali went to bed, i went to bath and wore black leggings, black knee boots, black and white long t-shirt a leather jacket and a cap. I looked for my gun again in my bag then Riley walked in.

Him: What you looking for?.

I freaked out a lil

Me: nothing

Save

Rate (37 Ratings)

[06/17, 09:57] Ron: PART 9 LOVE KNOWS NO COLOR

I froze didn't know what to say to him, he stretched his hand out for me to take the gun. I went up to him to take it.

Him: where are the girls?

Me: Sleeping..

Him: Okay

He walked out, i thought to myself that okay that was awkward i mean he just handed me my gun no questions asked and no curiosity. I put my gun around my waist then walked downstairs, i swear it was even hard to look him

in the eye, I really didn't want him to know about that part of my life especially since we we've grown close in the past few days. He was preparing something to eat, i walked to the door very quickly to avoid eye contact and any awkward conversation with him.

Him: in my house we say Goodbye when we leave, Incase we don't come back..

Okay did he just say that?

Me: Goodbye

Him: Goodbye Anny.

I opened the door, then i closed it again.

Me: i know you have a lot to say so just say it..

Him: i have nothing to say.

Me: fine.. uhm if you want me and the girls out we'll go just give me a couple of days to get a place

Him: i didn't kick you out.

It was hard talking to him about this, but i decided to break the ice.

Me: Riley i know you don't understand my lifestyle and probably we'll never understand it but I'm not a... I'm not a Thug by choice i was forced into this life, whether i like it or not this is my life.

Him: we all have a choice Anny. This is not your life you chose it.

Me: i do what i do to provide for my sisters!

Him: don't use your sisters as an excuse to do wrong things,don't blame them for the choices you made.

Me: I'm not blaming them im just saying..

Him: Saying what?

Me: That... I...

Him: What? Can't come up with a good enough excuse to defend your thug lifestyle?

This guy was pushing it now!

Me: You know what i don't even know why I'm explaining myself to you!

Him: You right you don't owe me any explanation.

I seriously needed to get out of there before i pull my gun on him. I walked to the door..

Him: Just know that I'm not gonna be the one to break the news to your sisters that you lying somewhere dead because you got shot.

He Walked upstairs with a plate of food. I walked out and got to The elevator, then made my way outside the building it was a bit windy. I was soo angry and hurt by what Riley said how can he judge me without even knowing why i do what i do, he should walk in my shoes first before judging. I Walked up to some bench sat there and started crying, what the hell was happening I'm not the type to cry I replace tears with Anger why am i turning soft. I sat there for

a couple of hours thinking then decided to walk back to the penthouse it was dead quiet when i got in. I walked upstairs to the bedroom took out my gun and put it under the mattress. I took off my jacket went and sat on the floor with my knees up to my chest and my head buried on my knees crying. I heard the door opening i didn't care to look who it was, but i figured it was Riley. He sat next to Me and pulled me close to him to lie on his chest and held me very tight, he wasn't wearing any t-shirt, just long black nikey tracksuit pants and sleepers.

Him: Sorry if what i said earlier sounded insensitive.

I couldn't say anything, i just kept crying all the pain that i have experienced came back to me, my sisters being raped, my mom's death, and her not being around choosing her pimp over us. After a while i stopped crying and we got up from the floor, his chest was wet with my tears, and he had a very dope body, 6pack and a bit

muscular. He went to the bathroom and wiped his chest then came back....

Me: Sorry about that..

Him: It's fine don't apologise..

He came very close to me and held my hand.

Him: I would really like to know about your pain sometime

Me: What pain?

He lifted my chin up so that i could look at him because i was looking down

Him: Your eyes carry alot of Pain and you trying to hide it off by acting strong and being this tough thug girl.

Me: i don't know what you talking about.

Him: i think you do

Me: i don't like where this conversation Is going.

I started walking out.

Him: that's the problem instead of talking about what bugs you, you always running away Anny that's an act of a coward.

Fuck! Did he just call me a Coward. I turned and went to him all angry

Me: don't fucken talk about shit that you don't know!

Him: There's the anger again..

Me: i can fuck you up right now!

He laughed a little.

Him: You don't scare me, you might put on this tough act but both you and i know that deep inside you this scared little girl.

I was beyond mad I raised up my hand to slap him, he held it then pulled me close to him with one hand on my waist and the other hand still holding my hand from slapping him..

Me: let go off me! Before i kill you!

Him: You not gonna kill me..

He was now pressing my body close to his and biting his lower lip while looking at my lips.

Me: I'm dangerous..

Him: i don't care...

He put his forehead on my forehead then kissed me, i felt my whole body shivering like i was gonna collapse,my heart was beating soo hard i thought it was gonna break.

Him: don't be scared of Me I'm not gonna bite you.

He put his hand under my t-shirt making his way up to my small breasts which made me feel a bit embarrassed because i know white men like a woman with big boobs. We kissed passionately i felt like i was in a dream that i was probably gonna wake up from in a few minutes. The kiss went on and on till he undressed me and I was only left with my bra

and underwear, he picked me up and gently laid me on the bed with him getting ontop of me. We continued kissing i didn't know how to please him i was a Virgin i didn't know what to do. He kissed me from my neck all the way to my tummy and then took off my underwear and went down on me, at first i was a bit scared because of that little unpleasant vaginal odour but he didn't seem to mind. When his tongue played around my Vagina i swear i was thinking that i was going to lose it i felt this intense pleasure my hands were on his head pushing him deeper and deeper, i was moaning and trying to close my legs. He came back up again to tongue kiss me this guy was taking me places i swear, he took off his pants and boxers and i felt he was hard. He opened my legs a bit wider, while still kissing like that he entered me and i gasped it wasn't going in.

Him: Are you a Virgin?

How did he pick that up so quickly.

I nodded yes.

Him: Are you sure that you wanna lose your virginity to me?

What the hell did that mean mara! His killing the moment.

I just shyly nodded yes, he smiled and kissed me.

He tried entering me again it was painful i moved up a bit.

Him: Relax, it's painful because your body is tense try to relax then it will be less painful.

Who was he kidding shit was painful, i never knew sex was gonna be this painful this fucken porn videos are misleading us.

He tried entering me again, this time he went halfway in, i was in pain i wanted to cry i knew that i couldn't carry on.

Me: Take it out!

Him: Whaaaat?

Me: It's too painful...

Him: This is gonna be a long night.

He took it out, i felt sad thought that i disappointed him, i mean what was wrong with me i thought I was sexually attracted to him,he was getting off me i pulled him back

Me: Let's try again

Him: Are you sure?

Me: yes

We tried again, he went down on me again trying to make me very wet which he did and he entered me it was still painful but was better when he was inside. He started off gently then increased the pace and put his hands under my thighs then raising them up a little which my knees almost touched my breast, put me in a position where i cannot escape from and pumped me hard i was screaming so loud i don't know how my sister's slept through all

that noise , after a while i started feeling numb couldn't feel him inside of me anymore, in a few minutes time he pulled out and ejaculated on the duvet. I looked down on the duvet and saw that i bled a little. He suggested that we go and shower , he picked me up and we went to shower..

Him: it wasn't that bad was it?

Me: What you talking about it was not that bad? I thought i was gonna die

He laughed.

After showering we went to bedroom to put on some lotion then i wore his t-shirt again, he stood there starrng at my thighs..

Me: Eyes up here please not on my thighs.

He smiled and looked at me

Him: Sorry just can't stop starrng at you. You soo damn sexy!

I blushed he came and kissed me..

Him: How about we go for a second round..

Me: You crazy I'm In a lot of pain.

Him: come on

Me: i need to rest doctor's orders plus that position kinda put me in too much pain from where i got stabbed

Him: My bad, I'll be less aggressive in sex next time

Me: Hmmm i think i like you aggressive like that unleashing that beast in you

Oh my word did i just say that!

He smiled and kissed me, i stopped him when things were starting to get heated again..

Me: think we should sleep.

Him: Okay my snuggle bunny.

We changed the duvet then i went to check on my sisters before i slept i opened the door and looked at them they were all sleeping peacefully

with Mbali's head hanging at the edge i swear sometimes i think this girl does karate the way she slept, i felt someone hugging me from the back and kissing me on my neck,i smiled.

Me: They look so peaceful

Riley: Maybe that's because they feel safer here.

Shit! Mxova i forgot all about meeting up with Sma.

Riley: Anny

Me: Yaa?

Him: just leave it all

Me: leave what?

He turned me around to face him.

Him: i can feel this strong connection between us and it's not because we just had sex, but it's because of how we've grown close to each other from this past few days. I think I'm falling for you and i want us to to be official because i

can feel there's some chemistry and let's see where it takes us

I was surprised because i felt exactly the same way, but i never thought he was gonna break the ice this soon.

Me: What are you really trying to say to me?

Him: I'm saying leave this thug life of yours and start a new life just me you and the girls.

I really didn't know how to process that, isn't it still early for that? I mean we just had sex once..

[06/17, 09:57] Ron: PART 10 LOVE KNOWS NO COLOR

Me: Wow that's a hard decision to make

Him: You can't live your life like this Snuggle bunny, it's too risky you can die any time and you still young.

He was right i need to change, i mean let me

give him a chance he probably can give us a good life.

I smiled at him.

Me: Okay we can try

He smile at me too

Him: You sure?

Me: Yes..

He picked me up all happy, why was he so into me i mean we just met not so long ago,he took me to the bedroom and laid me in bed.

Him: Please promise me that you done with this life..

Me: I'm done.

Him: if you go back to it I'm turning you in

I gave him a "WTF" look

Him: Yes you'll be safer In jail than being out there in the streets risking your life.

Me: You can actually do that?

Him: Yes i will snuggle bunny, there's people who love you that you have to think about, don't think about yourself only..

Wow that was the sweetest thing anyone has ever said to me..

Him: let's go to sleep before you get me in trouble with the doctor.

We got in bed with him laying behind me and hugging me.

Me: Snuggle bunny

Him: Yes?

Me: i never really asked you what you do for a living

Him: I'm a Mineralogist

Me: A mine—what?

Him: I'll tell you about it some other time now you have to rest.

Me: so you rich?

Him: No I'm not rich

Me: Yeah right that Audi probably cost a lot and this place

Him: Snuggle bunny I'm not rich I'm just stable.

Me: huh?

Him: Rich people wake up and watch TV and laze around all day, as long as you wake up in the morning and go to work then you not rich, it doesn't matter how much you earning as long as you go to work for someone else then you not rich you just financial stable.

Aii this guy is too smart for me.

Him: Now go to sleep

Me: Okay

Him: And i love you.

Eyy! That was too fast and awkward because I've never said I loved you to anyone before.

Me: i... Me too

Him: You too what?

Me: What you've just said....

Him: What did i say?

Me: Riley please don't push..

Him: Okay sorry I'll take the "me too" for now.

I laid there thinking about Mxova should i tell Riley, if i keep it a secret and then shit pops up i might lose it all.

Riley: What are you thinking about?

Me: Nothing..

Him: don't do that, you building a wall of secrets between us which will be hard to break down.

Me: i don't know how to tell you this.

He got up and sat up straight.

Him: Talk

I turned to look at him

Me: remember that guy that wanted to stab you that time you came to my hood?

Him: Yaa?

Me: His...

Him: his what Anny?

Me: His the one who stabbed me and now his after me to finish me off..

Him: well have no fear he don't know where you live

Me: unfortunately he does..

Him: How did he find out?

Me: i don't know

Him: Tomorrow we moving out

Me: moving out to were?

Him: My God-Father's place

He started with this God-Father thing i didn't wanna ask him what it meant Phela i don't

wanna show him that im uneducated..

Me: Okay

Him: Now can you please sleep snuggle bunny and stop thinking a lot

Me: Okay.

We went back to our sleeping position...

I was woken up in the middle of the night by my phone ringing, i took it and checked who it was and it was Sma. I looked at Riley he was fast asleep i gently removed his hand around me and went to answer my phone downstairs.

Me: Hi

Sma: Anathi Wtf!!!!

Me: calm down

Her: calm down for what? Calm down for who? Where the fuck were you at, we was supposed to go to zone 5

Me: i know and I'm sorry..

Sma: Sorry say Fuck! Do you know that Sfiso and i almost got killed at zone 5 because of you! Mxova had his roaches jump us

Me: why the fuck did you go there without me, you fucken retarded sometimes.

Sma: Fuck you!

saying shit like that while I'm trying to help you! Mxova ain't playing he will kill you!

This girl is crazy right now, i hung up. When i turned around Riley was standing behind me, i freaked out a bit.

Me: You scared me

He looked soo serious

Him: who was that?

Me: A friend

Him: a friend calling at 2am?

Me: Yaa

I didn't know what more to say I kissed him on

his cheek and walked upstairs to bed, i waited for him to come but he didn't i went downstairs after an hour or so and he had passed out on the couch. I went and got a mini blanket put it on him and switched off the tv then went to bed... I woke up the following day and brushed my teeth, i washed my face too. I went downstairs and while i was at the stairs i heard someone singing and playing the piano, was a beautiful voice i swear Chris Brown didn't take shit, i went closer and it was Riley playing the piano in the lounge and singing I kept quiet and watched him, when he stopped to write something in some small book i clap my hands. He looked back and smiled at me.

Him: for how long have you been standing there?

Me: long enough to hear your beautiful voice..

I went and sat next to him.

Me: Wow everyday I learn something about you. Why you never told me you know how to sing?

Him: You never asked

Me: How was i supposed to know?

He smiled at me.

Him: i can sing you a song if you want.

Me: I'd like that.

He started playing the piano and started singing.

Him: I'm more than just an option.. refuse to be forgotten.. I took a chance with my heart.. And i feel it taking over..

While he was singing he would also look at me and smile a lil then go back and looked at his piano, i saw from his eyes that he meant every word, he was tearing deep into my heart that tears started forming at the corner of my eyes.

Him: id better find your love n' id better find your heart... Id better find your love n' i better find your heart... Id better find it all my love where nothing's gonna tear us apart

I couldn't control my tears anymore, he stopped and hugged me.

Him: i mean it I'll find your heart,you just wait and see

This guy was just too perfect and it's not even funny,am i blessed? Or is he too good to be true?

I stopped crying.

Me: That was beautiful

Him: not as beautiful as you.

Really he thought i was beautiful no one ever told me that, this was getting too much for my liking i stood up..

Me: let me go and shower

Him: okay

Me: where are my sisters?

Him: i drove them to school.

Damn i totally forgot about them and school.

Me: You shouldn't have

Him: it was time that they went back to school.

Me: Thank you.

Him: You don't have to thank me, we a team now, there's no longer "i and my sisters" now it's "we and your sisters"

I smiled at him and went upstairs my phone was ringing, i rushed In to answer it and it was Sma.

Her: Kazi we need to talk

Me: at least you calm

Her: Sorry about last night but i felt a bit betrayed

Me: I'm sorry i didn't show up

Her: forgiven. Sfiso and i planned another heist for tonight and we'll come pick you up later at around 20:00

Me: a heist?

Her: Yes a heist Kazi, yazini (you know what) come to town we at KFC where are you?

Me: I'm around

Her: can we pick you up?

Me: No I'll come now

Her: okay call me when you in town I'll tell you which KFC

Me: Okay.

Eish u Sma how do i betray my best Friend especially since i put her in a lot of danger last night and on the other hand i can't break Riley's trust, I'm caught between 2 people i love. I know A lot of yall we'll say i shouldn't agree to the heist but Sma always had my back especially when i moved in at zone 4 she helped us alot, bought us groceries for a few months until she recruited me.

I bathe and wore a skinny Jean, a top, and ankle boots. I love boots shame i took my phone and

Riley was downstairs still playing on his piano..

Me: Snuggle bunny

He turned and looked at me..

Me: I'm going out to meet a friend

Him: What friend?

Me: the one i was with that day.

Him: Okay i love you

Me: I lov.... Me too

I walked to the door

Him: Snuggle bunny

Me: yes?

Him: don't forget If i find out that you doing illegal things again, I'm going to turn you in.

Me: You wouldn't.

Him: try me, I'd rather have you In jail where i can visit you everyday than having to identify your dead body in the morgue.

Is he serious right now!

who do i betray him or Sma?

[06/17, 09:57] Ron: PART 11 LOVE KNOWS NO COLOR

I Went to meet up with Sma at KFC,she stood up and hugged me.

Sma: I'm glad to see you.

Me: glad to see you too, were is Sfiso?

Her: he just left, so where you staying?

Me: You actually won't believe this, remember that white guy that we saved that day?

Her: The muller guy?

Me: Yes

Her: What about him?

Me: we living with him in his Penthouse

Her: Oh my word are you serious? *shocked*

Me: Yeap

Her: How did it happen?

Me: That day when we were evicted i called him.

Her: Wow and then what happened?

Me: he came to fetch us and ya here we are now.

Amazing how things work out,one moment I'm living in a shack the next I'm dating a white guy and living in his Penthouse

Her: then i did good by leaving you that day if i didn't you wouldn't be living with him now

Me: Yaa amazing how things turn out

Her : so are you guys are in a relationship?

I smiled and nodded yes.

Her: Wow Kazi I'm happy for you,from the way you smiling and glowing i can see that you have already given it up.

I didn't answer her i looked down.

Her: Am i right?

Me: probably

Her: Wow this is a turn of events for real, how was it?

Me: I'm not gonna discuss my sex life with you

Her: okay be like that, anyway let's get down to business so tonight we going house breaking remember that Lesbian we talked about?

Me: Ya?

Her: we going to rob her house, she's home alone

Me: uhm Sma i don't think i can do it.

Her: what you mean you can't do it?

Me: i promised Riley that im gonna leave this life.

She laughed

Her: You joking right?

Me: No

She started to get pissed

Her: i cannot believe this just because you had a taste of a white dick now you think this guy is gonna marry you and you guys will live happily ever after?

I kept my silence.

Her: You choosing this guy over me Anathi!
After everything we been through?

Me: just like you chose sfiso over me too.

Her: i didn't choose sfiso if i did i wouldn't be here right now and i wouldn't have went to zone 5 last night,kazi i almost died yesterday i almost died for you and you betray me like this?

Me: It's not like that.

Her: It's like what then?

Me: Sma i can't live like this

its too dangerous i have people to think of now

Her: bullshit!!! *shouting*

People started looking at us.

Me: I'm sorry i can't do this, you guys have to replace me.

Sma: fine don't come crying to me when this guy breaks your heart.

I stood up and left. I walked back to the Penthouse thinking to myself if I've made the right decision what if Riley turns on me what am i gonna do? I just lost my best friend. I got to the house and there was no one, i just chilled and watched tv. Riley came back with the girls in the afternoon, Mbali came to hug me.

Me: How was school sweetie

Mbali: was nice

Palesa: the only problem was when people started looking at us when uncle Riley came to fetch us

Me: Why?

Riley: because I'm white

Palesa: my WhatsApp and Facebook are buzzing with messages from my friends and classmates asking me if I'm dating a white guy.

Me: I'm sorry sweetie

Palesa: It's fine, look now even my haters are asking "who was that hot white guy who came to fetch you"

Me: tell them his my hot guy

Palesa: like that will work, i might be signing autographs tomorrow at school the way I'm soo famous.

We all laughed.

Me: Go and take off your uniform guys.

They went upstairs, and Riley came to sit next to me.

Him: And how was your day?

Me: it was Good.

Palesa and Mbali came back.

Palesa: Anathi what did you mean by “his my white guy”

Me: why don't you guys come and have a seat i think it's time you know.

They came to sit with us.

Palesa: know what?

Me: Uncle Riley and i we... We dating now.

Palesa: Asnt like Girlfriend and boyfriend?

Me: Yes

Palesa: and my prayers have been answered thank God!

Me: You were praying for us to date?

Her: Yes twice a day, morning and night.

I smiled at here that's so sweet.

Riley: and Anny has left that dangerous thug life, we starting a new life.

Palesa: This is the best news I've ever heard.

Riley: And you guys should start packing because we moving to a bigger house to live with my family

Palesa: Mbali you heard let's go pack.

They ran upstairs..

Me: i once said no running!

Palesa: Sorry.

Riley: And you should be packing too

Me: we leaving now?

Him: Yes, i wanna beat traffic..

I went upstairs and packed. After packing we all went downstairs and Riley was with that Jamie girl again..

Riley: i hope this time around you will have a different attitude towards jamie

I didn't say none.

Jamie: The girls can ride with me

Palesa looked at me waiting for my approval, i nodded my head yes and they went out with Jamie.

Me: Ain't you packing?

Him: Nah i have clothes at home, let's go.

He took my bag and we went out to his car, then drove to his home.

I was a bit nervous how is his family going to react to Me and my sisters. We arrived at Sandton with Jamie and the girls waiting for us at the gate. We arrived at around 17:00, we all went in and the house was big and beautiful. There was a white girl at the kitchen wearing a denim short, swimming bra, flip flops, and had curls in her hair. Jamie went up to her and kissed her, that was awkward i covered Mbali's eyes with my hand, Riley cleared his throat.

The girl: ohh sorry just missed this soul.

Riley: Guys this is my crazy sister Gina, and
Gina this is Mbali, Palesa, and Anny

She smiled at us..

Her: Hello guys

Palesa: hi

Riley: and you have already met Jamie she's
dating my sister.

Ohh Jamie is a lesbian i shouldve picked it up
that day because of how she was wearing.

Riley: Anny and her sister's will be staying with
us

I saw Gina's facial expression changing as if
like she was told that she got cancer.

Gina: What? Are you serious?

Riley: Yes.

Gina: Wait a minute you want them to live here
in Jack's house?

Riley: Yes Gina

Jamie: i foresee trouble

Riley: the won't be any

Jamie: Riley Jack hates me and I'm white.

Riley: This is a different story.

Jamie: let me go before he shows up.

She kissed Gina and went.

Gina smiled at us, but it was more of a fake smile.

Gina: Riley can i have a word with you in private.

Riley: excuse me

They went to talk in private.

Palesa: Tjo are we even welcomed here

Me: i don't know

Mbali: i wanna go to the Pan-house

Palesa: that makes the two of us..

The kitchen door opened and a white man walked in, i noticed it was Mr Muller he was

with some black man and he was shouting at him, when he saw us i swear I thought he was gonna have a heart attack.

Him: Who are you?

Me: my name is..

Him: What are you doing in my house!!!!

The way he was shouting and angry scared mbali who came to hold on to my leg tight.

Him: Thabo get me my shotgun!!

Thabo: but sir..

Mr Muller: there's 3 Negroes standing in my kitchen get me my shotgun!!!

Thabo: Yes sir

Thabo went to get the shotgun.

Mr Muller: How many are you? Did you come to rob me? Well you've come to the wrong place!!!!

Save

Rate (34 Ratings)

[06/17, 09:57] Ron: PART 12 LOVE KNOWS NO COLORS

Riley and Gina came while this man was all acting dramatic.

Riley: jack they with me.

Jack: You brought 3 Negroes in my house?

Riley: Unfortunately yes but for a good reason..

Jack: Where is Thabo with my gun!

Riley: Just listen to me for a second okay, this is Anny she's going to be our maid.

Did he just say maid?

Jack: Gail said she will get us a white maid! I want a white maid I'm tired of this black maids the sight of them makes me wanna vomit.

This guy is going too far does he know that I have a gun? I can pop a cap on him now. Thabo came back with his shot gun, Riley took Mbali and Palesa and let them stand behind him, while Gina came to stand in front of Me.

Gina: Gail is taking forever Jack you know we need a maid

Jack: we'll wait for Gail

Riley: that might take forever. Just give Anny a chance she comes highly recommended

Jack seemed to be cooling down.

Jack: Fine, but it's too many Negroes only her she can stay the other 2 Negroes have to go.

Riley: They have nowhere to go Jack, you destroyed their Place remember the mine situation?

Jack: so you decided to make my house a homeless shelter for this people?

Gina: No just give them a bit of time till they can find their own place.

Jack: I give them 3 days!

3 days? Where will i find a place for my sister's in 3 days this guy is crazy!

Riley: Thank you.

Jack: And i don't wanna see them anywhere near my house, i don't even wanna see them in my yard they must be invisible,i don't wanna hear Negroe music either.

Gina: I'll make sure they become invisible

He then looked at me..

Him: And you, better make sure that when you around my house cleaning make yourself invisible too, if i come to the kitchen and you here leave the kitchen immediately, you and i should never cross paths because If we do hell

will break lose.

Riley: I'll make sure that they don't invade your space.

Jack: Good and never touch my food! Don't even make me food i don't trust your kind!

This man was making me very mad.

Jack: And you Riley where have you been this past weeks?

Riley: i was at Brad's place

Jack: why you never called?

Riley: it totally slipped my mind

Jack: this is not a hotel! You don't come and go as you like do we understand each other?

Riley: Yes sir.

Jack: And you Gina what are you wearing? You look like a cheap hooker! Dress up!

Gina: I'll do that sorry.

Jack: probably that's the reason why you not married which man would wanna marry you busy dressing up like a hooker!

Gina looked down all embarrassed.

Jack: Get this things out of my house Riley!

Riley: Yes sir!

Jack: And you Miss hooker go upstairs and dress up!

Gina: Yes sir.

He started walking upstairs..

i asked myself if I was in the military because the Yes sir thing was on point

Gina: that was close,take them to florence's room before Jack actually shoots them.

Riley helped us with our bags and we went to some outside small house. It has 3 rooms, kitchen, bathroom and bedroom.

Me: a maid really?

Him: It's better this way trust me

Me: better for who? Did you hear this man he wants my sisters out in 3 days where will they go?

Him: I'll make a plan

Me: You know what let's just go to the Penthouse life was Better there

Him: We can't

Me: and why?

Him: if Jack finds out about the Penthouse situation we dead all 4 of us.

Me: I'm not scared of him!

Riley: You should be..

Me: I'll pop a cap of him, tell him not to fuck with me or my sisters!

Riley: not even your gun can save you from Jack his a...

Me: His a?

Riley: i better get going before he comes here, and please Anny make sure you don't leave this room. I'll see you in the morning.

He came to kiss me but i just pushed him away

Riley: I love you, never forget that.

I didn't say anything. He said good night to the girls and left.

Me: why the fuck are they soo scared of him

Palesa: he looks scary and crazy did you see him? Who wouldn't be scared.

Me: I'm not.

Mbali: he scares me too

Me: don't worry my dumpling I'll make sure he doesn't touch either of you.

Palesa: so what are we going to do?

Me: let me make a phone call I'm coming.

Palesa: don't go out you heard we not supposed to go out.

Me: Mxm I'm not scared of that Old man i told you.

I went outside and took my phone out of my pocket, Sma was my only option right now i called her.

Sma: What can i do for you your highness?

Me: Hey Sma.. Uhm are you guys done with the heist?

Her: No we actually on our way there.

Me: count me in..

She paused for a minute.

Sma: I thought you said you done with this life

Me: i thought i was done.

Sma: i don't have time for your games Anathi
bye!

Me: Sma Please i wanna be part of the team
again

Her: How do i know that you won't drop us

again?

Me: i won't i promise.

Her: Okay where are you?

Me: Sandton.

Her: Address?

Me: i don't know the address but i can give you the house description and where it is.

Her: Okay just sms me.

Me: Okay and thank you.

Her: no need to thank me, I'm just glad you came to your Senses.

I hung up and SmSed her the directions and everything.

I went back inside and changed to my black tracksuit and sneakers, then i put on a cap.

Me: Palesa I'm going out I'll be back..

Palesa: i thought you were done with this life

Me: That's when I heard that in 3 days time you guys are going to be homeless.

Me: You know the drill, lock and don't open for anyone.

Her: Okay.

I sat and waited for Sma to call. She called after an hour.

Her: i think i found the house come out to the gate.

Me: Okay.

I went out with Palesa locking the door behind me. I walked to the gate and it was locked, i just jumped the wall fence. This guy hates Negroes but his security system is soo poor. I walked to the car and greeted them.

Sma: Get in.

I got in then Sfisio drove.

Sma: whose house is that?

Me: Riley's God father

Her: thought you were living in a Penthouse

Me: we was..

Her: what happened?

Me: Agh i don't wanna talk about that.

Sfiso: Looks like a dope house.

Me: It is and it's our next target

Sma: Are you sure you wanna rob your father in law

Me: I'm damn sure.

We drove to the lesbian's house which was in Irene Park at pta. I still couldn't believe we drove this far for a mere house robbery. The lights were off so we parked our car next to her house and waited.

Sfiso: She's gonna show up now..

Me: How you know? Coz it looks like we gonna be here for a long time.

Sfiso: Unlike you i did my homework..

Sma: Kazi you have your gun?

Shit! I forgot my gun at the Penthouse..

Me: No i forgot it..

Sma: u dom yazi (you stupid) take mine you'll cover me

Me: Okay.

We waited till a Porsche car showed up.

Sfiso: That's her.

Me: And what's the plan?

Sfiso: when she opens the gate and goes in we get in too, just follow my lead.

The gate opened, we got out of the car and ran inside before the gate closed. It will be hard for her to see us because it was dark and we wearing black clothes. When she got out of the car, sfiso put his gun on her head.

Sfiso: scream and you dead!.

She didn't scream we took her inside with her leading the way. We got to The kitchen, but before we entered sfiso told her to switch off the alarm which she did and we went inside, and damn her house was beautiful. She looked scared and she was very pretty looked 18.

Sfiso: Anathi hold her hostage while we explore.

Me: You got it.

Sma: I'll be upstairs

Sfiso: I'll also check the house out and if there's anything valuable things when i come back you'll transfer money from your bank account to mine are we clear?

She nodded yes.

Sfiso and Sma went to the other places of the house.

I sat her down and pointed the gun at her...

Me: let's not try anything stupid okay?

Her: Okay.

Me: You still young to die.

Her: Please don't kill me

Me: i won't just behave!

Time went and i was getting tired of holding the gun, i wonder what was taking sma and sfiso soo long. My phone rang i took it out and it was Riley, i hesitated answering at first but if i ignore it might make him suspicious. I answered while still pointing the gun at the girl.

Me: Hey

Him: Snuggle bunny..

Me: ya?

Him: Just called to check what you doing.

Me: I was about to sleep

Him: Sorry to disturb you

Me: It's fine

Him: don't you want me to come to your and we talk about what happened earlier?

Me: No maybe tomorrow plus the girls are sleeping.

Him: That's funny because I'm In your room right now playing monopoly with them. Girls say hi to your sister.

They both said hi.

Him: So where are you?

Yoooh my heart sank, my knees started getting weak i didn't know what to say.

Me: I... Well what happened is... Uhm..

For the first time he actually called me by my name..

Him: Anathi what did i say to you?

I Lost concentration on our hostage i walked to the lounge.

Me: Riley i..

Him: Just know that when I hang up I'm calling the cops.

Me: No wait don't..

He hung up. I was in deep shit i started panicking thinking of a plan then i heard the alarm go off, shiiiiit i know this is not happening right now! I rushed to the kitchen and the door was closing the girl escaped. Sfiso came rushing..

Sfiso: what's happening?

Me: i took my eyes off her for a minute and she set on the..

Sfiso: What the fuck Anathi are you stupid?

Me: I'm sorry i..

Sfiso : we got to get out of here before security comes..

Me: where is Sma?

Him: she's upstairs

Me: We can't leave her..

I tried walking upstairs Sfiso grabbed me by my hand..

Sfiso: Let's go!

We ran out while i was screaming Sma's name. The girl's car was not around. We ran to our car and got in.

Me: we can't leave Sma..

Sfiso: we have no choice.

He started driving then i saw sma running towards our car but we were a bit far. i told Sfiso to stop.

Him: i can't stop..

Me: just stop!

Him: i cannot stop, i can only drive slow.

He drove slow and i opened the door and shouted at Sma to run fast, she ran as fast as she could but then i heard gun shots and she

went down. My heart stopped for a minute.

Me: Sfiso stop the car Sma got shot.

Sfiso: No Anathi we can't save her it's too dangerous.

I got off the car and fell.

Sfiso: Anathi what are you doing?

He got out and grabbed me, i was already in tears.

Him: We have to keep on going!

I saw the securities running towards our car sfiso and i quickly went In and he drove, i looked back and they couldn't catch up with us so they went back to Sma.

I couldn't believe that i was the reason why my friend got shot, i punched the car sit all crying and upset, how can i be so stupid!

Save

Rate (38 Ratings)

[06/17, 09:57] Ron: PART 14 LOVE KNOWS NO COLOR

I don't know what happened but i woke up at the hospital with Gina and The doctor looking at me, this was becoming my second home.

Doctor: Good morning I'm Doctor de villiers, do you know where you are and what happened to you?

I tried to get up but my head hurt, i put my hand on my head and i felt a bandage around my head.

Me: I'm not sure what happened Doctor i think i fell down the stairs.

Gina gave me a weird look.

Doctor: i don't think so. You sustained trauma to your head almost like a hard object struck you and you were bleeding, if you fell down the stairs you were supposed to have internal bleeding and your brain was gonna be affected

Me: I'm telling you that i fell down the stairs.

Gina: is she gonna be alright doc?

Doctor: Yes she will be okay but she will start having migraines as time goes on.

Gina: That's bad.

Doctor: i have to go and see other patients.

The doctor left, Gina looked at me.

Me: What?

Gina: You didn't fall down the stairs did you?

Me: I did

Her: How can you fall down the stairs but i find you laying next to the fridge. The fridge is too

far from the stairs.

I didn't answer her.

Her: Jack is responsible for your injury isn't he?

Me: i really don't know what happened

Gina: You know very well

Me: What's up with all this questions?

Gina: because it's not the first time he's done this..

Me: What you talking about?

She pulled her hair up and i noticed a big scar on her forehead, it was healed and starting to fade away..

Her: He Hit me with a cricket bat, almost cracked my skull

Me: why?

Her: Jack uses Violence to get his way

Me: Why hasn't anyone done something yet

about this man?

Her: His very dangerous you don't wanna double cross him.

Me: is he your father?

Gina: God Father meaning he stepped up to the position of being a father to us after we lost our parents.

Me: Ohh now we i get the whole God father thing, but out of all people why did yall choose Jack to be your God father.

Her: we didn't choose him he chose us. From what I've heard Is that Jack and my mom met back in high school they were high school sweethearts. As time went on they got married then my mom started having an affair with our Father who was Jack's cousin and she fell pregnant with Riley first Jack didn't noticed he thought Riley was his then i came along too Jack still didn't notice. My father knew about us and that we were his and he wanted to take us

and my mom too, so my mom decided to tell Jack the truth then left him but Jack wasn't gonna have none of that he pursued them and had my father killed then took us back to his house. Ever since from then he abused my mother and us my mom was weak she couldn't handle the abuse anymore he drove her insane like literally and my mom ended up in an Asylum.

Me: Asylum?

Her: Yes an institution where they take care of mental unstable people..

Yooh this was big..

Her: We originally from Germany, after that whole incident with my mom Jack adopted us legally.

Me: How did you guys end up here in south Africa?

Her: Jack was involved in alot of Ponzi

schemes and he made millions out of robbing people then when the cops started investigating him that's when he skipped the country with us.

Me: so it's not only me that he has a problem with?

Her: No. He hates me too because he says i look alot like my mom and that reminds him of her. He wanted me to study medicine but i didn't i went for modelling instead and when he found out i thought he was gonna kill me. He beat me so bad that's how the cricket bat situation came about and he locked me in a room for 2 weeks only served me water and 1 slice of bread twice a day, i lost weight because of that and i almost died because of malnutrition.

I noticed she started having tears in her eyes.

Me: Has he ever done something like that to Riley?

Her: Not really what he did to him was worse.

He once whooped Riley on his back with a cable that his skin started to peel off and Riley held on to a bob wire fence and bled on his hands too if you look closely on his back he still has scars. he was just 9 at that time Jack made sure that we become very scared of him when we were young. But at least Riley ended up making him proud.

Me: How?

Her: He became a Mineralogist something that Jack always wanted.

Me: Jack is a ruthless man

Her: He has no heart his beyond evil he made us suffer all this years because of the anger he still has for my mother, we suffering for our mother's sins.

Me: I'm truly sorry about this.

Gina: It's okay now we have to tell Riley about what Jack did you

Me: No we not gonna tell him

Her: No Anny we have to tell him..

Me: No Gina what if Riley goes and do something stupid then Jack kills him we not risking that, promise me you won't tell him

Her: But..

Me: promise me Gina..

Her: I promise.

Riley walked in while we were still talking about Him, he looked worried he Came up to me and hugged me.

Riley: I was worried about you what happened?

Me: What are you doing here? You suppose to be at work

Him: Gina called me, don't worry about work you more important to me than work.

Me: I just fell down the stairs.

Gina cleared her throat, i gave her a serious look.

Him: How did you fall? Weren't you looking at where you were going?

Me: No i was carrying a basket and i couldn't see where i was going

Gina: We don't have baskets in the house.

Me: can you give us some space please..

Gina: Fine.

She walked out.

Riley: don't ever scare me like that

Me: I'm sorry..

He held my hand.

Him: You look like you hurt yourself very bad.

Me: I'll be fine..

Riley chilled with me for the whole day. I stayed at the hospital for a week, with Riley, Gina and my sisters visiting me. I was discharged on a Friday morning and Riley came to fetch me, and we went home. We got to my room, i was

relieved that im out of the hospital. I bent over to take my phone from the floor and i felt a sharp pain in my head as if like someone was sticking a knife in my skull, Riley sat me down.

Him: Are you okay?

Me: No i get this sharp pain in my head when i bend.

Him: did you drink your pain killers?

Me: No i didn't

He stood up got me water and my pain killers and i drank.

Come let's go to the house I'll make you something to eat.

I got a bit scared ehh what if Jack Is there and he attacks me again.

Me: your father said we shouldn't hang around the house.

Him: i don't care about Jack come.

Me: What if he does something bad to me?

Riley: not when I'm around. I won't let him hurt you.

We went out to the house, i sat down at the kitchen table and he went to the fridge took out eggs, bacon, cheese, and fish fingers.

He prepared a scrumptious breakfast for me with Apple juice on the side.

Me: Thank you

Him: Anything for my snuggle bunny.

As i was about to take a bite of my fish fingers Jack came down, i put it down and stood up to leave, Riley held my hand.

Riley: sit down and eat.

Jack came and gave me a deadly look,my heart started beating fast..

Jack: You missed work for a week!

Riley: she was at the hospital, can't you see the

bandage that's wrapped around her head?

Jack: i don't care about that!

Riley: she sustained trauma to her head she almost died Jack!

Jack: she almost died but she's not dead is she? I want her back to work immediately.

Riley: she's not gonna be able to work for a few days

Jack: she's our maid and she will work! When i come back i want my house clean! And this is not a restaurant for Negroes!

He took my food and put them in the bin,he even threw away the plate and the glass that's how much nigga hated me.

Him: And Riley why ain't you work?

Riley: i took a day off.

Jack: I can see but why?

Riley: doesn't concern you.

He almost threw a punch at Riley but stopped himself.

Jack: Son don't test my patience.

He looked at me all disgusted then left.

Riley: i swear one of this days!

Me: let me get to work

Him: don't be crazy go rest I'll hire someone for the day.

He walked me to my room then put me in bed and kissed me,then went. I got out took off the bandage and put my hand at the back of my head they had cut my hair and stitched me In a small area though, my phone rang and it what sfiso..

Me: i thought you said i shouldn't call you

Sfiso: Yes i said that

Me: then why you calling me.

Him: Sma is in hospital she's in a critical state

but she's alive

That was a relief.

Me: that's great news

Him: i wish..

Me: at least she's alive sfiso can't you be thankful for that?

Sfiso: No because when she gets better she's going to jail, cops are on her and there's a guard standing at the door of her ward. Anathi if she goes down she's taking us with her are you ready to go to jail?

Me: Ofcause not.

Sfiso: Me either so we have only one option right now

Me: what's that option?

Him: silence her forever

Me: What you mean silence her forever

Sfiso: we have to kill her!

I dropped my phone and my mind just froze at what he said to me.

Save

Rate (31 Ratings)

[06/17, 09:57] Ron: PART 13 LOVE KNOWS NO COLOR

Sfiso drove and parked the car under some bridge, i was still shaken by what happened.

Him: If Sma dies just know that you responsible for her death!

Me: i know that Already.

Him: Get put of my car!

Me: Ini? (what)

Him: Ung'zwile Anathi (you heard me Anathi)
just get out!! *yelling*

I have never seen sfiso this mad.

Me: but we in the middle of nowhere you can't
just kick me out.

Sfiso: i see that I'll have to drag you out.

He got out then came to my side and literally
dragged me out the car and threw Me on the
ground.

Him: i never wanna see you again, don't even
call me or text me! Whatever business
relationship we had is over!

He went back to his car and drove off, i laid
there not believing what happened, I'm in the
middle of nowhere, in the middle of the night no
cars passing it's very quiet. I got up and walked,
had no gun on me, I left Sma's gun in the car. I
walked for almost an hour very scared that i

might get attacked and raped then i saw Engine Garage that i was a relief, i went there took my phone out and called Riley he was my only option.

Him: Anathi.

Me: Hey Snuggle bunny.

Him: What can i help you with?

Me: i.. Can you please come and fetch me..

Him: Were are you?

Me: i don't know Riley I'm in the middle of nowhere.

Him: how did you get there?

Me: I.. My crew... We

Him: Then tell your crew to come and get you.

He hung up. Eish what am i gonna do now, i don't know how I'm gonna get home and also I couldn't stop thinking about Sma tears where even falling as i sat on that pavement. I looked

at the time and it was 01:00am, it was even freezing. I cried till i heard no tears anymore then my phone vibrated and it was a call from Riley.

Me: Riley

Him: Now I'm starting to get very worried about you, where are you just tell me the exact location.

Me: I really don't know, but I'm at Engine Garage

Him: Okay go inside give someone the phone to direct Me.

I stood up and went inside i gave the cashier my phone and she directed him, he told me to wait for him. I went outside to wait for him, and he showed up after 3 hours, i didn't notice that it was him until he got out because he was driving a red jeep instead of his Audi, i ran up to him and hugged him, i let all the tears out he didn't say none just held me tight.

Me: I'm very sorry..

He put his hands on my face and wiped my tears.

Him: It's Okay snuggle bunny..

Me: I swear I am done with this life, I'll never go back.

Him: i hope you mean it this time around.

Me: i do mean it, you right i can't live like this I'm still young.

He smiled and kissed me through those tears..

Him: Let's go home..

Me: let's go..

Him: damn you cold

He took off his jacket and put it on me then walked me to the car, he was such a gentle man he opened the door for me then we drove home. We got home he put the car In the garage..

Him: don't you wanna sleep in my bedroom

tonight?

Me: won't your Father see me?

Him: Don't worry he is a heavy sleeper.

He took my hand and we went inside the house then went to his bedroom. He opened the door and Already we were all over each other kissing and undressing each other. He didn't take off my bra he ripped it off, when it came to sex Riley was this beast that i didn't know. When we were finally naked he picked me up and put me on the dressing table, then opened my legs and came in between them while holding on to my thighs. I wasn't even that wet when he entered me and it was mad painful maybe it's because i was still a bit tight Phela it was my second time having sex. He pounded me very hard i had to actually hold on tight to the edge of the dressing table, i swear nigga was on a mission i don't know if this was his way of punishing me for what i did but he went H.A.M(hard as a

motherf***) on my Vagina and he was also pulling my hair hard i couldn't help but scream very loud i didn't care if his father was hearing me.

Me: Riley please stop you hurting me!

He didn't even take note of what i was saying he just went on and on.

After 15 minutes he pulled out and i noticed he that he didn't ejaculate.

Me: did you come inside of me?

Him: Yes

Me: Why would you do that for?

Him: i realized that i actually have to get you pregnant in order for you to stop with this shit life of yours.

I seriously can't believe this nigga!

Me: ohh wow Riley, and that's your way of solving our problems?

He didn't say nothing he walked to his bathroom which was in his room. I got off the dressing table i was in soo much pain and there was blood on the dressing table. I went to the bathroom got a towel and wiped it off. I picked my clothes from the floor, dressed and went to my room. I knocked and knocked Palesa opened while rubbing her eyes.

Me: Sorry that i woke you up this late.

Her: It's fine, but it's late though 4am.

Me: Go back to bed..

She went back to bed, i locked and went to pee. Yoooh when the urine came out it was burning and it came out slow i clenched my teeth so that i don't scream. After peeing i got in bed with my sisters, the bed was not big enough for the three of us so i just took some blankets and slept on the floor. My phone rang after like 30min and it was Riley what did he want now.

Me: What do you want Riley?

Him: Anathi I'm sorry..

Me: Sorry for what Riley? Are you sorry for tearing up my Vagina or are you sorry that you got me pregnant?

what exactly are you sorry for!

Him: I'm sorry for both. I really want you to stop this life that you living and maybe trying to get you pregnant was not the right way but ill do anything right now to get you to stop living dangerously.

I was in tears.

Him: i did not Ask to fall this hard for you but since i did i really want a future with you.

I kept quiet.

Him: Maybe we'll talk in the morning when you feeling better.

Me: Ya maybe

Him: I love you snuggle bunny.

Me: Me too

Him: Good night.

Me: Night.

I hung up and i couldn't sleep Sma was all in my mind but i did fall asleep eventually... I woke up to a loud knock in the morning,i wasn't In the mood to wake up.

Me: Palesa open the door.

There was no answer.

Me: Palesa open the fucken door!

Still no answer.

I got up and my sisters weren't in bed, i checked the bathroom no sign of them the knock kept on getting harder i went to open and it was Gina.

Gina: that took you long enough.

Me: I'm not in the mood for anything I'm looking for my sisters.

Her: Relax, Riley took them to school before he

went to work.

Me: sometimes i forget that they have to go to school.

She took out some pills and gave them to me.

Her: Drink one

Me: What are these for?

Her: That my dear are precautionary pills to make sure that you don't fall pregnant.

Me: Fall pregnant?

Gina: Really Anny? You think i didn't hear you last night

The embarrassment though, i looked down.

Her: Riley asked me to get you the morning after pills so you don't fall pregnant since you guys were careless and didn't use a condom

I don't know why Riley was discussing our sex life with his sister. I went to the kitchen and drank the pill.

Her: And you late, you supposed to be In the house already cleaning.

Me: i forgot about that either.

Gina: You forgot about everything, if i didn't know it I'd think that you already pregnant.

Me: I'm not pregnant.

Her: That's very Good now wear florence's uniform it's hanging behind the door.

Me: who is florence?

Her: our previous maid,she quit 2months ago.

Me: Why?

Her: Ask no questions and hear no lies, hurry up and get dressed before Jack notices that you not in the house doing your job.

She left and i quickly bathe, had to be extra careful since I was Still in pain. After bathing i put on the uniform and went to the house. Gina showed me were the cleaning things were and i

just started cleaning. I was tired after a while i decided to sit down and take a break, this was gonna be hard i was halfway through cleaning the kitchen mara the way i was tired and sleepy you'd swear I cleaned the whole house already. I stood up after a few minutes and went to wipe the fridge outside with a cloth and a handy Andy busy humming. All of a sudden i felt a hard blow at the back of my head that sent me down on the floor immediately, then i heard a voice but it was a bit faint saying "i told you that when i enter the kitchen or anywhere you should walk out"

Save

Rate (37 Ratings)

[06/17, 10:56] Ron: PART 15 LOVE KNOWS NO COLOR

Days passed with me recovering, Riley hired a temporary maid, Jack was a bit off my case but he still wanted my sisters out. What sfiso told me really stuck in my mind but there was no way that im gonna kill my best friend,i even went back to my maid job. One Wednesday morning when i was cleaning the wall tiles i overhead Jack talking to some woman in the lounge.

Jack: I have to go back to Germany for a while.

Woman: No Jack you cannot go, if you go you will be handing yourself into the German authorities.

Jack: i have no choice Gail, plus it's been 16 years im sure my case ran cold it's probably closed now.

Woman: Can't you get someone to do this job for you?

Jack: No i have to do it myself if Tessa is really out of Asylum then i have to kill her. I cannot let Gina and Riley find out that their Mother is out and looking for them.

Ohh my word! I walked backwards while my hands were on my mouth i accidentally knocked the bucket and it fell.

Woman: Whose that?

I quickly picked up the bucket ran to the kitchen and pretended as if like i was moping the kitchen floor, as soon as i saw Jack coming down i walked to the door.

Jack: Anny were you upstairs in the passage?

Me: No sir i have been here the whole time.

Him: i saw water on the floor

Me: i had an accident while i was cleaning the wall tiles earlier today.

He gave me a look that said "i know you lying"
he walked torwads me and i walked backwards.

Jack: Do you know what i do to liars?

Me: I'm not lying sir

Him: i never said you were..

He came close and put his hand on my throat
and started chocking me i was coughing.

Him: I am..

The woman came down..

Her: Jack she's the least of our problems, come
we still have unfinished business.

He let go off me and went upstairs with the
woman. She was white and very beautiful
looked like she was on her late 40s.

I coughed a bit and i went to my room, my
phone rang while i was still sitting there thinking
of what i heard,it was sfiso who was calling i
answered.

Me: Eyy Sfiso I'm not gonna kill Sma.

Sfiso: Anathi we getting 30 years if Sma talks.

Me: How do you know?

Sfiso: i have my sources,so are you in or not?

Killing Sma sounded better than going to jail, i mean 30 years was alot If i leave my sisters whose gonna take care of them? And Jack hates them he wasn't them out i can't have them sleeping on the streets.

Me: How sure are you that Sma is going to talk?

Sfiso: do you think she's gonna let herself go down alone especially because you the one who fucked us up she would wanna retaliate.

Sfiso has a point i got her shot plus we haven't been seeing eye to eye lately she might retaliate.

Me: So what's the plan?

Him: I'll come pick you up later tonight dress classy, put on a dress and heels.

Me: where am i gonna get a dress and heels?

Him: Make a plan Anathi!

He hung up. Gina was the first person who came to my mind. Riley came back later in the afternoon with the girls who looked very happy.

Me: why are yall so happy?

Palesa: Uncle Riley took us bawling after school

Me: wow you guys really enjoyed i guess.

Palesa: too much

Me: Okay I think you guys can start with homework.

I went up to Riley and kissed him.

Palesa: Eeuw guys Please there's kids around.

Riley: Yes kids must see how madly inlove we are.

Palesa: Okay Mbali let's go do our homework in the garden,before this kids turn into the bold and beautiful.

Me: Make sure Jack doesn't see you.

Palesa: Okay.

They both left.

Riley: i have a couple of ideas what we might get up too

Me: hmhhhmm im listening.

He kissed me on my neck.

Him: we can satisfy each other's needs in bed.

Me: i like the sound of that.

We kissed then made our way to bed, then the door flung open it was Gina.

Gina: Yall don't have time for that. Jack wants to see all of us now!

Aii i wonder what he wanted now, we went to the house he was standing at the kitchen with the woman and they had bags.

Jack: I'm glad yall are here i have an announcement to make. Gail and i we going to

Germany for a while.

Gina: Why?

Jack: have a little business to take care off.

Gina: when are you coming back?

Jack: depends on the assignment. But i think I'll stay there for a month probably.

I saw smiles from Riley and Gina.

Jack: i don't want any misbehaving while I'm gone or people will be sorry.

He looked at me.

Jack: And most of all i don't want people with big mouths.

I looked down.

He took the bags and they went out. Riley and Gina started doing the Nae-Nae dance.

Gina: Join us

Me: i don't dance.

Riley: let me go and get the kids to come and do their homework In the lounge.

He went out.

Me: Gina can i have a word with you.

Gina: ya sure.

Me: Can you borrow me a dress and heels.

Her: going somewhere?

Me: I'm accompanying a friend to a business function.

Her: Okay come upstairs and choose a dress.

She had beautiful dresses.

Me: You have a lot of dresses for a lesbian

Her: I'm a fam not a butch.

Me: Whatever that means.

The kids came inside and Riley helped them with their homework In the lounge.

I bath at 17:00 and put on a red mermaid dress

with a Gold waist belt, red heels, my hair was short had to cut because of the scar. Gina organized a wig for me, it was a long Black and red weave, she also gave me a red clutch bag, then she looked at me with her eyes wide open.

Her: Wow you look yummy, the dress fits you perfectly.

Me: You think so?

Her: i know so,let me take you a pic.

She took me a picture, then Sfiso sent me a message that his outside. Gina and i went out to the lounge, my sisters reaction was just wow, they stood up clapping and making noise.

Me: What? is it too much?

Palesa: hell no! You look sexy.

Riley was starring me as if like he didn't believe that it's me.

Riley: what's the occasion?

Me: I'm accompanying a friend to a business function

Him: And you never told me?

Me: I'm telling you now.

Gina: Guys Please no drama.

Me: i have to go his at the gate.

Riley: so it's a he..

Me: Yes his name is Sfiso.

Palesa: Since when is Sfiso a business man his a th..

Me: Shut up wena!

She kept quiet.

Riley: tell him to come in.

Me: What?

Him: Some random guy is taking my woman out to some business function, i wanna see him.

Me: We late Riley..

Him: either i see him or you not going..

This guy was serious, i took out my phone and called sfiso to come in he came. He was looking classy himself wearing a suit.

Me: Sfiso this is Riley and Riley this is Sfiso.

Sfiso: Good to meet you man..

He gave him a handshake.

Riley: So where are you taking my woman?

I was scared that Sfiso was gonna say something stupid.

Me: To a business function..

Riley gave me a serious look..

Riley: was i talking to you Anathi?

I looked down.

Sfiso: like she said we going to a business function. I was supposed to go with my wife but unfortunately she's in hospital.

Riley: where's the invitation?

Sfiso: invitation?

Riley: Business functions usually take out invitation cards to give their employees informing them about the venue, time, and the dress code. You would know that if you were really going to a function.

This was not going well.

Sfiso: Ohh Ya.. the invitation i left it at home.

Riley: Where do you work?

Sfiso: uhm PMC Goldings.

Riley took out his phone, he was on it for a while.

Riley: What does the company do?

Sfiso: It's a mine we deal with gold.

Riley: There is no mine by that name.

Busted!!!!!!!!!!!!!!.

Me: You don't trust me Riley?

Him: No i don't the last time i trusted you, you broke that trust.

Me: i don't have time for this, let's go sfiso.

I grabbed sfiso's hand and we went, i thought Riley was gonna follow us but he didn't.. We got to The car and drove to the hospital. We got to The hospital and went in.

Sfiso: follow my lead..

He held my hand and we went to the receptionist.

Receptionist: Can i help you?

Sfiso: Yes, i am Mr zwane and this is my wife Mrs zwane. We here to see my wife's sister Smangele jezi.

She paged through some book.

Her: Sorry no one is allowed to see that patient.

Me: Please mam we from Cape Town and if i don't see her today i'll never see her again.

Please she's the only sister i have.

Her: Sorry mam..

I faked tears which were hard to come out,i went on my knees.

Me: Please mam i just need to see her even for 30sec Please please please i cannot go without seeing her.

Sfiso: It's okay love get up from the floor.

Me: No sfiso she's the only sister i have.. and the only family i have.

Sfiso got me from the floor and hugged me.

Him: It's Okay love i understand.

I was already crying on Sfiso's shoulder.

Receptionist: Okay fine i can see how important this is let me talk to the doctor..

She talked to the doctor and the doctor allowed but i was given 5min.

I went in her ward alone with Sfiso standing outside distracting the guard. She was laying there with an oxygen covering her mouth, eyes closed my heart shuttered did i really have to do this. I took one of her pillows removed the oxygen and put the pillow over her while closing my eyes tight i heard her gasping for air. I waited till the EKG counted down then i heard a beep i looked and it was a flat line, i took the pillow back and screamed very loud. The guard and Sfiso came in.

Sfiso: What happened?

Me: i don't know i was talking to her then she...
It.. I

The guard went and called the doctor. The doctor came in with nurses then they took us out. I was pacing in the passage. After a while the doctor came to us looking down.

Me: Doctor what's wrong? Is my sister okay?

Doctor: There's no easy way to say this but..

I started walking backwards saying "No"

Doctor: I'm sorry Mam

Me: No!! Not my sister..

I was crying by then and on the floor, sfiso came to hold me.

Sfiso: Please don't cry baby

He took me to the waiting room and got me coffee. The doctor came to us.

Me: What happened Doctor?

Doctor: i don't know but we can take her body for an Autopsy for her to be examined and the cause of death can be determined.

Sfiso and i looked at each other.

Me: That won't be necessary doc she's suffered a lot and Been through a lot.

Doctor: Just think about it you don't have to make a decision now.

He left us then Sfiso and i left. He drove and i

was quiet. We got to The gate,i opened the door and he held my hand.

Him: You did a good thing Anathi we had no choice.

Me: how will i live with this guilt?

Him: it will eventually go you'll forget.

He gave me a long tight hug then broke it off, he kissed me on my cheek, then kissed me on my mouth. I pulled back and slapped him.

Him: Sorry i don't know what came over me.

I looked at him, then kissed him, we kissed for a while then i went to sit on top of him, he didn't take off my dress he just lowered my bumshort and i unbuttoned his pants and took them down a bit. He put it in and we went for it, he wasn't as good as Riley bit sex is sex. We had sex in his car, that was parked at my boyfriend's gate.

After 5min i got off him, i couldn't believe what just happened i pulled up my bum short and

went out he followed me.

Him: Anathi wait..

Me: What happened was a mistake.

Him: i know i mean i still love sma

Me: You should be mourning her death! And I love my bf.

Him: I'm sorry

Me: no its not your fault. I think it's better we don't see each other no more

Him: that's a good idea.

He hugged me and kissed me on the cheek, then left.

I took off the heels they were hurting me now, i couldn't wait to make up with my Riley i was totally done with that life, i walked in the house and he was standing at the kitchen with Thabo and a luggage bag.

Me: Hey Snuggle bunny you going somewhere?

Him: No you are

Me: going were?

Him: I'm kicking you out for good.

He is what!!!

Save

Rate (36 Ratings)

[06/17, 10:56] Ron: PART 16 LOVE KNOWS NO
COLOR

Was Riley really kicking Me out?

Me: where do you expect me to go Riley?

Him: i don't know Anathi buy what i know is i
can't keep on going back and forth with you

about this.

Me: Is it about the Business function?

Him: There was no business function

Me: yes there w..

Him: Anathi don't make me a fool, Palesa told me about this Friend of yours. He's not a business man his a thug like you and you two were doing something illegal tonight weren't you?

I started crying maybe tears would change his mind.

Me: Okay maybe we did Plan a heist but this was my last time.

Him: You said the exact same thing the last time.

I went close to him trying to touch him but he pushed me off.

Me: Snuggle bunny please we can work

something out.

Him: No we can't. I love you Anathi but the Pain you put me through is too much, everyday i have to worry about your safety whether you gonna come back home or not.

Me: i always come home Riley.

Him: Yes but for how long?

You know what I'm not gonna beg this white boy, if he wants me out fine I'll take my sisters and go we used to this life.

Me: if you want me out it's fine I'll get my sisters and we'll go.

Him: You leaving alone.

Me: They my sisters wherever they go i go.

Him: I'm not letting you put this girls through hell. What normal life are they gonna have if you busy dragging them into this shit life. What you doing to them i called abuse Anathi!

Me: They my sister's! You don't know what we have been through i have sacrificed everything for them! So don't tell me shit, and what good life are they gonna have here with your racist Father?

Him: When Jack comes back i will take them to a safer place.

Me: Riley we can talk about this.

Him: Thabo Please help her with her bag.

Then he started walking upstairs, i was soo furious i tried going after him but Thabo held me.

Me: Fuck you Riley! I am not going to have you take my sisters away from me! No one will take them away from me!!

He stopped.

Riley: And Thabo if she tries to take the girls with her call the cops.

Me: I'm gonna fight you Riley!

Him: Good luck with that we'll see which side the judge is gonna choose especially considering your lifestyle.

He cannot take my sisters away from me, my heart was not broken it was shattered, i was crying uncontrollably

Me: Riley Please don't do this to me they all i have they my life.

Him: You will come back when you have sorted yourself out.

He walked without looking back leaving me crying and screaming.

Me: Riley!

Thabo: We have to go.

He took my bag and walked me out, when i say out i mean out of the gate. So there i was homeless not knowing were to go. I thought of Sfiso he was my only option, i took my phone and called him. It ran i was praying that he

answers of which he did.

Sfiso: Hello

Me: Hey Sfiso it's me Anathi.

Him: Anathi, i thought we agreed on no more communication

Me: i know but i need your help.

Him: What kind of help?

Me: My boyfriend kicked me out i need a place to stay.

He kept quiet.

Me: Sfiso!

Him: yooh Anathi Askies but i cannot help you..

Me: What do you mean you cannot help

Him: my parents won't allow

Me: but they allowed for Sma to move in.

Him: Yes they know Sma as my gf if i Bring another girl it will be awkward

Me: make an excuse

Him: I'm sorry Anathi try someone else i can't help you.

Me: Sfiso please.

Him:Sorry..

He hung up on me. I stood there and tried to call him again after 5min and i got "the subscriber you have dialed is not available at present, please try again later" fuck sfiso was useless. I stood there in the middle of the street not knowing were to go, i was alone in the whole wild world. How is this love thing?

Because it has brought me nothing but pain! I thought Riley loved me but he didn't all that sweet songs he sang for me all that sweet act of loving me were lies how can he do this to me? And ontop of that take my sisters from me the only family i have. I walked down the street i was still wearing the dress no shoes no money not knowing were I'm gonna go. I was walking

up and down in the streets of Johannesburg at 23:00 no gun, no knife, no nothing to protect myself with! For the first time i was worried about my safety. I walked till i was tired i needed a place to sleep at least for tonight only.

I found an abandoned building wich had the sign "keep out" at the gate. I threw my bag over first then i jumped the bob wire fence which cut me bad i was bleeding i went inside and it was dark, dirty, smelled of Urine and had pieces of bottles. I found a good spot to sleep i changed my dress and put on pants, and a t-shirt and a jacket i didn't have shoes on Riley forgot to pack my shoes, i put on my socks. There was boxes around i took them and laid them there then made my bag a pillow. I laid there crying busy talking to my mom.

Me: Mama wherever you, whether heaven or hell please come and Get me! This is too much for me now.

While i was crying two guys showed up they looked like them Nyoape boys. I sat up straight leaning on the wall,they looked at me all laughing and rubbing their hands. One of them said "Sgegetha cava le cherry" (Sgegetha look at this girl). Then Sgegetha replied by saying "Sadla today" (we going to eat today).

They both came to me, one pinned me down i couldn't fight him he was strong the other one came and took off my Pants. Yes shit was Real i was getting raped. I tried screaming but the one who was taking off my pants went And got a piece of bottle then put it on my throat.

Him: scream again and I'll kill you.

I kept quiet with tears falling as he continued to take off my pants. Where was Riley when i needed him the most?

I blame him for this, I'll never forgive him.

[06/17, 10:56] Ron: PART 17 LOVE KNOWS NO COLOR

One thing about me is that I fight till the end i cannot allow myself to be violated like that especially seeing how hard my sisters lived with rape it haunts them even today. I raised up my knee and hit the Nigga in his manhood hard, and he did slightly cut Me on my throat the other one that was pinning me down let go off me to help his friend,the friend was screaming and put his hands on his dick.

Him: Sgegetha u grand mpintshi yam?
(Sgegetha are you okay my friend)

I got up and ran for my life.

Sgegetha: don't let her get away go after her you fool!

The friend ran after me, i went over the bob wire fence he was shocked that i actually went over

it. He took off the chain from the gate, and went out through the gate.

I was running with my bumshort, T-shirt, and jacket only no pants no shoes, i was bleeding from my neck, bleeding from my hands and thighs because of the bob wire fence i ran screaming down the road and i saw a car coming i stood in the middle of the road screaming for help. When the car stopped the Nigga ran back, a woman came out.

Her: Oh my goodness are you okay?

Me: I'm fine sorry about that.

Her: You bleeding you should go to the doctor

Me: No thanks I'll be okay.

I walked away, i wasn't gonna go to no hospital again I'm tired of those places. I walked till i came across a group of girls they looked like prostitutes, i just went up to them because I couldn't walk any further anymore i was tired

and a bit dizzy from the bleeding. At first They stepped away all scared of me, i was crying for help but still they were stepping back. After 5min another girl showed up from the corner when she saw me she came to me.

Her: Kanti what's wrong with you girls, she's bleeding and need help mara you guys are stepping back hai shame on yall!!.

She came and put my hand around her neck then helped me walk, we walked up to her flat. It wasn't a beautiful flat it was very ratchet. We walked in and it was a bachelor flat she sat me on the couch and went to get warm water in a basin and a towel with a bit of dettol. He wiped the blood off my neck and my thighs and hands with the dettol water and a towel.

She went and cut her t-shirt then wrapped it around my neck and got me pjs.

Me: Thanks

Her: It's okay we all need help once in a while.

Me: I'm Anathi

Her: I'm Diamond. So Anathi what happened?

Me: I was attacked by two Nyoape guys they wanted to rape me.

Her: I'm sorry about that.

Me: It's not your fault, it's my boyfriend's fault.

She gave me a confused facial expression.

Me: we had an argument then he kicked me out, i walked all the way from Sandton to here.

Her: What? That's not right your boyfriend is not a good person what If you got raped and killed.

Me: i don't think he cares..

Her: Well you can live with me until you get on your feet

Me: Thank you.

She took out a cigarette and went to smoke outside. She came back after a few minutes and made me something to eat, bread and eggs.

I ate then she gave me a blanket i slept on the couch....in the morning i woke up and she was making coffee.

Her: Good morning

Me: Morning

Her: How did you sleep?

Me: i slept good thank you

Her: Can i make you coffee?

Me: No thanks i need to go get my clothes from were i was attacked last night.

Her: Okay I'll go with you.

Me: No its fine you don't have too

Her: i want too you can't go alone it's dangerous.

She borrowed me her clothes but none fit she was a bigger size so i had to settle for her summer dress, i took off the wig and brushed my hair. She borrowed me her sandals too.

Her: i thought that was a weave

Me: No its a wig

Her: It's beautiful

Me: You can have it

Her: Are you sure?

Me: Yes I'm sure.

Her: Thank you.

I went to one of her drawers and took a knife and put it around my waist balancing it with my bumshort and praying that it doesn't stab me.

Diamond and i went to a place were i got attacked and unfortunately we didn't find the bastards i just took my bag and we went back to the flat. Finally i can change and dress up to my leggings and t-shirt. My phone was In the bag and no missed call or message from Riley.

Diamond asked me to accompany her to run some errands i went with her,we went to a few places then walked back to the flat. As we were walking i saw Diamond stopping and taking a

few steps back.

Me: What's wrong?

Her: Run!

She grabbed my hand and we ran and hid behind some car that was parked on the side of the road.

Me: What was that about?

Her: i saw my ex boyfriend

Me: so?

Her: i owe him money for drugs

Me: You do drugs?

Her: I'm a prostitute i do everything. I think we can go now.

We went back to her flat and chilled. At around 19:00 i went and changed to my black tracksuit and wore a cap. I asked Diamond to borrow me closed shoes she Borrowed me her sneakers they were a bit bigger.

Her: were you going?

Me: just like you i hustle

Her: You a prostitute?

Me: No I'm a thug.

Her: I'm coming with you i wanna see this.

She wore a short denim skirt with stockings, heels, T-shirt and a short leather Jacket.

Me: How you gonna run with heels?

Her: i always run with them don't worry..

Me: Okay grab a knife

She did and we went to the door. When we opened the door some guy came in and put her hand on Diamond's neck and pinned her to the wall chocking her.

Him: Where's my money!!

His accent sounded Nigerian. I didn't know if i should help Diamond or not that man looked scary and buffed up,i went up to them.

Me: How much does she owe you?

Him: 10 000

Me: Please give us a couple of days to come up with the money.

Him: i have given her alot of time

Me: give us Some time again.

Him: i give you 7 hours if my money doesn't show up by then I'm killing both of you!

He let go of Diamond and went,okay what did i get myself into!

Diamond: Were are we gonna get 10 000 in 7 hours?

Me: we have to hustle hard.

We went out and walked around until i noticed some woman going to the ATM, the ATM was in a quiet place with no people passing. I went up to her put the knife on her throat.

Me: How much do you have in your account

right now?

Her: 3000 Please don't hurt me

Me: i won't hurt you if you give me the money.

She withdrew the money and gave me. I took it then Diamond and i started running till we were far from the ATM

Diamond: Wow that was epic how did you learn to do that with soo much courage?

Me: long story I'll tell you some other time, and you do you have some skills?

Her: just one

Me: What is that?

Her: pickpocketing

Me: let's go then we have no time..

We went around and diamond did some pickpocketing and got 5 wallets, we went back to the flat.

The wallets didn't have much cash just cards

we counted the cash all together from the wallets plus my R3000 and it made 5000 in total.

Me: We 5000 short

Her: we tried

Me: come we have to hustle again

Her: I'm tired

Me: You wanna die? That man looks serious

Her: why you helping me?

Me: because you helped me too

Her: Okay we can go but I need a drink first

She took 1500 from the 5000

Her: let's go

Me: where we going?

Her: You'll see

We took the remaining cash and hid it then went out. Diamond took me to some strip club that looked ratchet as hell.

Me: What's this Club?

Her: It's a strip club you should be happy you gonna see some ass since you lesbian

Me: I'm not lesbian

Her: You not?

Me: No what makes you think I'm one?

Her: The way you dress and your short hair and you act lesbian.

Me: I'm not lesbian.

Her: Okay sorry but this is the cheapest Club ever..

She bought lots of alcohol then they put us in the vip section because of the alcohol we bought. There was nothing fancy about the vip section just red couches, the Club wasn't that full. We drank and danced then the club owner brought us some stripper to come and dance for us.

Diamond: No thanks we not les...

Me: No its fine let's see where this takes us.

The girl came danced for us she had a big ass that i ain't never seen before she was wearing a bra and a G-string. She looked Mixed race. We threw a bit of cash on her while she was dancing, then she came to give me a lap-dance, okay that was a bit awkward i looked at diamond and she just smiled and winked at me.

The girl whispered in my ear

Her: should we go somewhere private

Me: Okay

She took me by my hand with diamond making slight comments

Diamond: You a lesbian just admit it!

For your own info I'm not a lesbian i don't know if it was the alcohol that was doing this to me or what. She took me to a private booth sat me down then sat on top of me and kissed me.

Okay i know nothing about being a lesbian what am i supposed to do with all that Ass!

[06/17, 10:56] Ron: PART 18 LOVE KNOWS NO COLOR

I went with the flow and kissed her while running my hands on her body. The club was playing music so loud that the sound reached the booth. When we came they were playing house now they were playing hip hop and R&B, then a song that i never thought i was gonna hear ever again played it was Drake_Find_Your_Love, same song that Riley sang for me. I stopped kissing her.

Her: Why you stopped?

Me: It's nothing sorry.

I kissed her again, but aikhona who was i kidding? the song hit home especially that part "id better find your love n' id better find your

heart” i stopped kissing her again.

Her: Am i doing something wrong?

Me: sorry i have to go.

She got off Me and i went to Diamond, she was busy dancing on the vip section.

Me: I’m leaving

Her: why what’s wrong?

Me: Nothing i just wanna go..

Her: come on Anathi just..

Me: Diamond i said i wanna go! *Yelling*

Her: Chill, here are the keys you’ll have to go alone I’m still having fun.

I took the keys and walked away and i heard Diamond asking the girl what she did to me, the girl replied and said she doesn’t know.

Tears were already falling i quickly

Made my way out of the club and walked to the

flat still crying. I went in i didn't even switch on the light i took off my tracksuit i was only left with my bumshort and vest, i laid on the couch and cried i missed Riley soo much.....i must've passed out on the couch because i heard the door opening, i thought it was Diamond at first but it was the ex, he looked around and saw me on the couch then came to me.

Him: Were is my money!

Me: Wait let me expl..

Nigga didn't wanna hear none of that he grabbed me by my neck and threw me hard on the floor Yeap that's how strong he was for a moment i thought i was in wrestling because that was a serious chokeslam. I bumped my head hard against the coffee table i saw a bit of stars, then he came on top of me and choked me i was running out of breath vele i thought i was dying until someone hit him with a bottle on his head. He looked back and it was

Diamond he got off Me and went to her, i was trying to get up to save Diamond because she was screaming. I got up and i was dizzy my head was aching and i was coughing when he saw me he came to me pushed me back on the floor and repeatedly punched me on my face. I was starting to bleed from my mouth I'm sure my face was bloody too i was hoping Diamond would come to my rescue and she did because I heard the Nigga screaming i couldn't see what was going on because my face was bloody he got off me. Diamond came up to me and helped me get up then walked me to the bathroom and washed i my face. When i looked at myself in the mirror i was buttered, my eyes were swollen, my mouth was swollen and i accidentally bit my tongue i was just a mess. I went back to the lounge and saw the Nigga Laying on the floor bleeding with a knife in his chest i looked at diamond, she looked at me. I tried to speak and my speech was not good because of my

swollen lips and bitten tongue.

Diamond: i had to stab her Anathi if i didn't He was gonna kill us.

I have rolled with fucked up people before like Sma but Diamond was beyond fucked up she didn't even look scared or worried that she just stabbed someone probably to death.

Me: well is he deaf?

Her: deaf?

I was trying to speak but my mouth was too Busted.

Me: No dea..

Her: ohw dead i don't know let me check.

Diamond checked him.

Diamond: he is dead.

Me: ohh my God we going to jain

Diamond: we not going to jain or jail!

Me: How caa... How caa..

Her: try not to speak okay i know people who know people we not going to jail this was self defence, let me make a call.

Diamond's face was a mess too but she was better than me. She made a call then came back and we sat down looking at the body and i had a massive headache.

After some few hours there was a knock at the door she went to open and a cop came in, she hugged him.

Diamond: Sbu thanks for coming.

Sbu: What have you done this time?

Diamond just pointed at the body Sbu lost it.

Sbu: Diamond what have you done!

Diamond: He tried to kill us Sbu

Sbu: i cannot help you on this one you on your own.

Diamond: Sbu don't make me send that video to your wife

Sbu: and you always blackmail me with that.

Diamond: i just need you to bail me out of this one this is for the last time after this I'll never bother you again i promise

Sbu: and you'll stop blackmailing me? And delete our video from your phone?

Diamond: i swear i need you to help me on this one look at what that bastard did to my friend. He looked at me.

Sbu: okay let me call someone i don't know how this is gonna turn out but we all agree to self defence.

Diamond: Ya self defence.

Then Sbu looked at me.

Him: And your story is he tried to rape you that's why you on your bumshort and vest.

I nodded my head yes.

Sbu went out and he didn't come back for a while, i even thought he ditched us. He came back after a while when i even forgot about him, he was with paramedics and some guy who was wearing a suit.

Sbu: As you can see things were hectic here Detective Kunene he put this girls through hell look at that one(pointing at me) He tried to rape her, look at how she's scared.

The detective came up to me i was still sitting on the floor.

Detective: hi I'm detective Kunene can you tell me what happened?

I tried speaking but my mouth wouldn't allow me.

Him: Just nod your head, did he try to rape you?

I nodded yes

Him: did your Friend help you?

I nodded yes.

He went and took a statement from Diamond who said that the Nigga came in while we were sleeping and tried to rape us that's how the fighting and stabbing came about.

Sbu: Kunene this was pure self defence

Kunene: It is man, i don't think they even need to go to court they look like they have been through a lot.

They took photos of Me incase the case goes to court so they can show the judge and paramedics suggested i go with them to the hospital i refused. The detective and paramedics left. Diamond hugged Sbu and thanked him.

Sbu: If there's nothing more I'm leaving.

Diamond: No problem.

Sbu left, then Diamond started cleaning the floor which was full of blood. My phone rang

and it was Riley my heart stopped a bit i couldn't answer i mean my speech was impaired. I let the phone ring till it stopped then i sent him a message on WhatsApp that i can't talk and asked what he wanted. He said my sisters wanna see me tomorrow, i agreed and told him I'm gonna come to see them at the house. I know right now i should be worried about how am i gonna see them with a buttered face like this but that didn't matter i was just happy that im gonna see them. After Diamond cleaned the floor we decided to sleep.... I couldn't sleep i kept on having the picture of the Nigga Laying there in a pool of blood i was shaking then I also heard Sma's voice busy calling my name i was looking across the room trying to see where the voice was coming from and it kept on saying "Anathi I'm here, I'm here Anathi" the voice kept on playing in my head it was driving me crazy i went to sit at the corner of the room with my hands on my ears and

screaming. Diamond woke up all freaked out thought someone maybe was trying to attack Me. She came to hold me tight and i was shaking and crying we sat there for a while what was happening to me, am i going crazy? Diamond said i must sleep with her on the bed, sleeping was hard i only fell asleep when it was bright outside..... I was woken up by my phone it was Riley i answered.

Him: Anathi were are you its 12:00

Damn it was 12:00 already.

My speech was still a bit impaired but at least i could talk. Riley said i should meet them at some park, i didn't waste time i bathe and wore a Jean with a t-shirt and Diamond's sandals with a cap my face still looked bad, i walked to the park and i saw them Riley was sitting on the bench reading a paper, Palesa and Mbali were playing on the swings when they saw me they came running to hug me. It was an emotional

moment i cried because i missed them soo much,while hugging them.

Palesa: Hey what happened to your face?

Me: i was involved in a car accident.

Mbali: a car accident!

Me: Ya my friend was driving

Palesa: Yooh did you go to the hospital?

Me: Yes i did..

Mbali: You speak funny Ses'Anathi

I just laughed a little, Riley came up to us and damn my nigga still looked fine he was wearing a black denim Jean, a white Nike t-shirt, and black&white Nikey air force sneakers still had that David Beckham hair cut he looked soo handsome.

Him: Hey

Me: hi..

Palesa and Mbali went back to the swings, Riley

and i went to sit on the bench. I tried avoiding eye contact it was embarrassing for him to see me In that state,i was ashamed to look at him i looked down the whole time.

Him: What happened to your face?

Me: car accident.

He didn't ask any further questions.

Me: they still living with you?

Him: Yes Jack is not back yet

Me: they look happy

Him: They are happy,why don't we all go for lunch?

Me: why don't we buy lunch and eat here I'm not in the mood for people's eyes.

Him: Okay let me go and buy some takeaways.

He went to get some takeaways i played with my sister's. He came back with McDonalds we all gathered and ate while talking and laughing i

was enjoying the moment. We chilled there till 16:00

Riley: i think it's time to go

They got up and hugged me then Riley gave Palesa his car keys and said they should go to the car, they ran to the car.

Him: Was good seeing you again

Me: was good seeing you too.

He started walking to his car and i was walking to the flat, my heart was sore, i didn't want this day to end i missed them soo much especially Riley. I stopped walking and looked back he also had stopped and was looking at me, i couldn't walk out on them again i just ran back to him and hugged him while crying.

Me: I've missed you

Him: I've missed you too

Me: i don't wanna lose you again I think I'm ready to come home, i wanna come back home

He looked at me all shocked

Him: Are you sure?

Me: I've never been this sure now I've realized what's more important to me and it's you and the girls

He smiled at me.

Me: i love you and i want us to try again.

That was my first time saying those to him im sure he was also surprised.

Him: i love you too.

Me: Really? You still love me even though i look like this?

Him: Are you kidding me? Id still love you even if you was on a wheelchair nothing will ever make me feel different about you.

I smiled and he tried to kiss me but my lips still hurt so instead he kissed me on my forehead.

Him: Let's go home..

He put his hand around my waist and we went to the car.

Him: Girls guess whose coming home with us?

My sisters lost their minds they got out of the car to hug me, was a special moment we were all happy and crying except for Riley who was just smiling and looking at us and glad that im going home with them.

Palesa: don't leave us again

Me: never

Palesa: i love you Anathi

Me: i love you too

Mbali: i love you Ses'Anathi

Me: And i love you too my dumpling

[06/17, 10:56] Ron: PART 19 LOVE KNOWS NO COLOR

We drove to Diamond's place to fetch my things

she was sad to see me leaving she couldn't stop flirting with my Riley i didn't mind that because she was never gonna get him. We drove back to the house, when we arrived Gina was with Jamie they were chilling at the kitchen and Eating she was happy to see me she even came to hug me.

Gina: Welcome back Anny.

Me: Thank you

Jamie came to hug me too.

Jamie: we were worried about you

Me: thanks guys but I'm okay.

Gina: What happened to your face?

Me: Agh had a bit of a car accident

Jamie: that's bad

Me: I'm just grateful that im okay.

Palesa: excuse me guys i need to do something on my laptop.

Me: Laptop?

Palesa: Yes uncle Riley bought me a laptop and bought Mbali a tablet, he even bought me a new phone Samsung s6.

Me: haibo I've been gone for only a few days and already they acting like they Oprah's kids

Riley: Sorry but this are my babies i have to spoil them.

I'm afraid of the day that Riley and i gonna have kids his gonna spoil them like crazy.

They went to the lounge to play with their gadgets.

Riley took me to his room.

Me: don't spoil them that much please.

Riley: Just let them Enjoy they have been through a lot they deserve some happiness

Me: Mxm I'm jealous i have never been spoiled like this.

Him: It's because you never here, but don't worry I'll spoil you tomorrow we'll go shopping for anything that you want.

Me: i like the sound of that.

He came to kiss me, and i felt the need to vomit i ran to the bathroom and vomited. Riley came and knelt next to me busy rubbing me on my back.

Him: Are you okay?

Me: i don't know i just felt the need to vomit.

Him: Probably it's the McDonalds meal

Me: Probably.

I stood up and rinsed my mouth.

I sat down and i was starting to feel nauseated.

Riley: Anathi are you sure that you okay?

Me: I feel very...

Him: Very?

Me: i think i wanna vomit again.

I ran to the bathroom to vomit again.

Riley: That's it I'm taking you to the doctor tomorrow

Me: Okay.

Him: let me go and run you a hot bubble bath.

He went and ran me the bath i went in and relaxed. I got out after 30min and wore my Pjs it was around 20:00.

Riley: How you feeling now?

Me: It's worse i even feel hot..

He came and hugged me. Gina came to our room to tell us that dinner is ready. We went down to the table, Palesa and Mbali were still on their gadgets.

Gina: Girls come and eat.

Palesa: Just one minute Aunt Gina

Gina: No my babies you have to eat come on.

Mbali: just one minute Aunty

Riley: leave them they ate earlier

Me: Riley you spoil this kids alot. Palesa and Mbali come and eat!

Palesa: but..

Me: I'm not gonna repeat myself!

Palesa: Uncle Riley

Riley wanted to say something but i gave him a serious look.

Riley: come on girls i don't think she's joking.

Me: And I'm not gonna repeat myself again.

They came to the table and we dished up. The smell of the meal was horrible.

Me: What is this?

Gina: Lasagne

Me: It doesn't smell good

Gina: What you talking about its the best dish to

ever exist.

Me: i think I'm gonna vomit..

I ran to vomit on the kitchen sink, i wonder what was wrong with Me I've never felt like this before , i went back but i sat on the couch i didn't like the smell of the Lasagne.

Gina came to me.

Gina: Anny are you okay?

Me: No i don't know what's wrong with me.

Gina: could it be the Migraines that the doctor was talking about?

Me: What are migraines?

Gina: they are throbbing headaches that affect one side of the head and they are mostly accompanied by nausea.

She could be right plus That Nigerian ex of Diamond threw me hard on the floor.

Me: could be

Gina: You must see the doctor

Riley came to the room.

Riley: we'll go Tomorrow. I think you should get some rest snuggle bunny.

He picked me up and carried me to bedroom.

Gina came with a plate of food and pain killers

Gina: eat this and drink pills you'll feel better.

Me: i hope it's not Lasagne.

Gina: No its noodles.

She gave me and i ate they tested very good.

Me: They taste good i think i want some more and put some sauces while you at it.

She went to get me more and put sauces.

Yoooh that tested delicious, i was satisfied then drank the pain killers and slept i slept like a baby no nightmares no voices in my head or maybe it was because of the pills or maybe it was because of Riley holding me tight i felt safe.

.. Riley woke me up in the morning with breakfast in bed, it was oats mixed with strawberries and orange juice. I brushed my teeth, came and ate, after eating I ran to the bathroom to vomit.

Him: Snuggle bunny bath we going.

Riley was already dressed up. I went to bath and dressed up then we went to the doctor. The doctor came at around 9am and we were the first ones in.

I explained to the doctor about my headache incidents from Jack and Diamond's ex. The doctor did think it was the migraines they resulted from the trauma I sustained from my head injuries. He did a lot of tests, then came back with the results after a few minutes.

Doctor: So we did a lot of tests and you tested negative for HIV.

Riley smiled at me.

Doctor: and you tested negative on the other tests too but..

Me: but?

Doctor: You tested positive for one test

Me: which test is that?

I was worried Riley held my hand.

Doctor: You 1month pregnant congratulations.

I am what?!!!!

Me: excuse me i am what?

Doctor: Pregnant isn't that great news?

Riley let go of my hand and went out.

I tried to remember how this happened and eish Sfiso!!

I went out to Riley who was drinking water at the waiting area, eish i didn't know what i was gonna say to him i approached him.

Him: why didn't you tell me that you pregnant?

Me: i didn't know

Him: It's mine right?

I nodded yes. He smiled and hugged me, yoooh at least that was a relief he took me to the car and we drove home. He was very quiet In the car until we got home. Gina was cleaning the kitchen, she stopped when she saw us.

Gina: So how did it go?

Riley: Shall i tell her the good news or you will?

Me: I'm.. Preg.. Pre..

Riley: She's pregnant.

Gina was shocked

Gina: Wow that's great news I'm actually gonna have a niece or a nephew.

Me: looks that Way.

Riley: i have to go to work girls, snuggle bunny I'll see you later.

He kissed me goodbye and went.

Gina: I'm happy for you.

I didn't say nothing

Gina: Are you okay you seem worried?

Tears started falling

Gina: What's wrong?

Me: It's not Riley's baby

Her: What are you talking about?

Me: i was raped

Her: You were what?

I wasn't gonna tell her about me cheating.

Me: Gina you have to help me abort.

Gina: Anny no i can't..

Me: Gina please i cannot leave with this baby
that im gonna resent for the rest of my life.

Gina: but what we gonna tell Riley?

Me: We gonna say i miscarried

Gina: Anny what you asking me is big

I begged her till she gave in. We got into her car and drove around looking for those backdoor abortions. I didn't care if it was not safe i wanted this baby out! We got one and we went in, i swear it looked scary things were just hanging around. We sat down on a grass mat a woman came to us.

Her: Ngingakusiza ngani? (what can I help you with)

I was even ashamed to say abortion.

Me: Ngifuna ukukhipha isisu (i want to do an abortion)

Her: It's R800

I looked at Gina

Gina: What?

Me: can you borrow me R800?

Gina: I'll have to go and withdraw.

Before Gina went out to withdraw the woman took out scary tools and started wiping them.

Gina: You gonna use that?

Woman: Yes

Gina: Hell no! That looks dangerous

Woman: Awutshele le ntombazana ithule (tell this woman to keep quiet)

Me: Gina hush..

Gina: No Anny does this woman even have credentials? Is she legal? Does she have a medical degree

Oh my word! Gina was pissing me off!

Woman: Ntombazana if uzong'moshela iskhathi phuma! (girl if you gonna waste my time leave)

Me: Sorry ma ukuthi..

Woman: Hamba ntombazana! (leave)

I stood up and went out all mad at Gina.

Me: great Gina now we back to square one!

Gina: You want to die? What am i gonna tell Riley when you dead, his gonna kill me if you gonna do this, you gonna do this right! I'll contact Jamie's mother she's a nurse she'll get us pills.

At least that was a relief. We spent the whole day shopping at the mall buying clothes, eating it was nice we went back home at 16:00 and Riley was sitting in the lounge drinking a whiskey and listening to music.

Me: Hey Snuggle bunny

He gave me a faint smile.

Gina: Riley you drinking..

Riley didn't pay attention to her.

Me: i never knew that he drinks

Gina: He doesn't.

Riley: Gina give us some space

Gina: No You know how you get when you drunk.

Riley: Gina i said give us some space.

Gina went upstairs, Riley looked serious i have never seen him this serious.

Him: You went shopping?

Me: Yes let me go put the plastics in the bedroom I'm coming.

As i was walking upstairs i heard the whiskey bottle break right behind me, it missed me by a few inches, i turned back and looked at Riley he was fuming, his face was even red.

Me: Riley what the hack!

Him: Who has been fuckin you?

Me: What?

Him: Anathi you not carrying my baby, whose child is it!

Yooh my throat became dry.

Him: I'm not a fool Anathi!

you know i gave you a chance hoping that you will come clean but no you haven't instead you looked me right in the eye and Lied to me that it's mine!

Me: It is yours Riley

Him: It's not mine! I only came inside of you once!

Me: Yes it's that time..

He raised his voice.

Him: Stop with your lies! That was 3months ago you supposed to be 3months pregnant if it was Mine! So whose the Father of that bastard child you carrying!

Yoooh I've never seen Riley soo mad.

Me: It's yours Riley i swear.

He punched the wall hard.

Him: Anathi i swear! Keep on lying to me and i swear i won't be responsible for what I'm gonna

do to you!

[06/17, 10:56] Ron: PART 20 LOVE KNOWS NO COLOR

I thought to myself that this is the time i need to put the best award winning performance that deserves and Oscar.

Riley: Talk woman!

Me: Yes this child is not yours..

He came closer

Me: i didn't tell you because it's a shame that i will have to carry. When you kicked me out i walked up and down looking for a place to sleep until i found an abandoned building, i tried crashing there but 2 junkies came and tried to rape me i was saved by a couple of girls and one of them took me to live with her you've already met her. Unfortunately Diamond was owing her ex boyfriend money and one night he

came in while i was sleeping and stupid me i was only on my underwear and he raped Me. I tried pushing him off me Riley but he was just too strong.

I looked up for tears not to fall down.

Me: Not only did he rape me he beat me also, that was a night of terror,that's why my face is buttered lil this, i thought..

Him: Stop...

He came to me and held my hands.

Him: This is all my fault i should have never kicked you out that night.

Me: don't apologise i understand you were fed up.

He hugged me.

Him: i understand if you don't wanna forgive me because i cannot forgive myself right now.

Me: i long forgave you Riley all i want to do is to

just forget about this that's why i wanna abort.

Riley: Are you sure about that?

Me: Yes i can't live with this thing inside of me knowing that it's the source of my pain.

Someone came in while we were talking and it was Jamie.

Jamie: sorry to interrupt can i talk to you Anny?

Riley: let me go put the plastics for you In the bedroom.

Riley walked with my plastics to his bedroom.

Jamie: Gina called me about that situation and i contacted my mother. She stole pills for you at the hospital i just fetched them now.

She passed Me the pills.

Me: Thank you soo much.

Jamie: don't sweat it I'm glad I could help. Is Gina around?

Me: Yes she's in her room.

Her: Okay and you supposed to drink two of those pills preferably at night.

Me: Okay I'll do that thanks again.

He came and gave me a hug then went to Gina's room.

I went up to Riley's bedroom, he was wiping his face with a towel.

Him: What did Jamie want to talk to you about?

Me: came to give me the abortion pills, got them from her mom

Riley: Are you sure about this Anathi?

Me: Very sure.

Him: Can you please not keep anything from me again?

Me: i won't

Him: because you see how things turn out when you keep things from me?

Me: Yes.

Him: So is there anything else you want me to know about?

Me: There's nothing

Him: i can't make you promise because you have a tendency of not keeping your promises,so I'll just take your word for it.

Me: I'll never hide anything from you anymore

Him: i love you Anathi and i want us to work I'm tired of this endless fights.

Me: i love you too.

He came to give me a hug and kissed me. I drank the pills at least Riley believed my story after killing this baby things will be good between us and I'm not planning on fucking up anymore i drank the pills.... I couldn't sleep that night i had serious cramps Riley was even starting to get worried, Gina tried to give me pain killers but they weren't working. The pain was horrible more than period pains. I went to

the toilet and sat there, it was better when I sat at the toilet. While i was sitting there i felt something come out, from how my Vagina stretched i did feel it was a bit big, after that the pain seized i stood up and looked down the toilet, and there was my baby Inside the toilet. Was soo small though everything was out the Amblical cord and all that. I closed my eyes and flushed, i then went back to the bedroom sat in bed and cried. Riley came to hug me

Me: It's over Riley the baby is gone.

I cried i don't know why i was crying or was it because killing has become soo natural to me. Gina suggested i go and bath because my Pjs were full of blood, i went and bath then she got me a pad because the blood was still coming out. I laid in bed with tears falling down,i was sleepless the thoughts of murdering my baby and Sma kept me awake.....the next few days were hard on me Sma's voice in my head came back i couldn't sleep at night i was always

scared that Riley suggested i go for Therapy. Therapy was gonna be good if i didn't murder my besty, i mean how am I gonna tell the therapist that im having sleepless nights because I murdered my besty and now she's haunting me? i squashed the idea of seeing a therapist and i told myself that I'm gonna get through this alone I'm tough. The next coming days things were good between me and Riley no fighting looks like we were making it, until one Sunday morning when we were having breakfast as a family me, Riley, Jamie, Gina and my sisters. Riley received a text that made him uneasy.

Riley: No!!!

Me: What's wrong?

Him: Jack is coming back tomorrow

We all put down whatever we were holding.

Jamie: best news ever "sarcasm"

Gina: couldn't you tell us after breakfast now you've ruined my apatite.

Riley: And that's not all

Gina: What could be more devastating than what you've just told us.

Riley: he doesn't wanna find the girls here

Me: Tough luck they not going anywhere!

Riley: Unfortunately we have to come up with a plan because Jack is gonna throw them out on the street.

Gina: How can we come with a plan now,it's short notice he must give us some time.

Riley: You know Jack.

Gina: What we gonna do?

Palesa: i don't wanna be homeless

Me: You not gonna be homeless.

Palesa: How do you know? That man is vicious.

Me: Because..

Jamie: because you'll move in with me and my mom.

We all looked at Jamie.

Her: I don't think my mom would mind it's just the two of us.

Me: i don't think that's a good idea i mean no offence but i don't know your mom what if she mistreat them?

Jamie laughed.

Gina: Jamie's mom is sweet she can't even harm a fly

Me: still im not supporting this idea

Riley: so you would rather have them homeless?

I can't have them homeless but at the same time i don't trust Jamie's mom i don't even know her, but right now i have no choice. I agreed to my sisters going to live with Jamie

and her mother. After breakfast we cleaned Jack has to find the house spotless then later we drove my sisters to Jamies house. It was a beautiful house they lived in Newtown. Jamie's mom seemed very nice i was even thinking she's faking it, she welcomed my sisters and hugged them. We didn't stay that long Riley said he will send cash every month to support the girls. Since Gina and Riley trust this woman I had to trust her too. We left with my sisters crying they didn't want us to leave them but i promised to visit every week and told Palesa to call me if this woman mistreats them. We went back home there was nothing to do Jack killed our vibe i just moved my clothes back to the outside room. I slept that night because i was tired from the previous sleepless nights.... In the morning i woke up and bathe wore my maid uniform went to clean the house just to make sure that it's spotless and not give Jack an excuse to fire me because I was In alot of

trouble.... Jack arrived at around 11am with Gina and amongst them was a pretty white girl with a beautiful slim body and long blond hair she was a barbie doll believe me, we were all waiting at the kitchen for their arrival but i quickly stood far from everyone pretended to be washing clean dishes.

Jack: It's good to be home, i see you've been keeping my house clean.

Riley: Thanks to our maid

Jack gave me a disgusted look.

Jack: Riley meet Janet she's Gail's daughter

Riley: Hey..

This Janet was blushing and smiling.

Janet: don't you remember me?

Riley: No

Janet: we used to go horse riding when we were young.

Riley: Sorry i don't think we've met before.

Jack: that doesn't matter Riley we have something to discuss with you come to the lounge.

Gail: Gina make us some lemon tea and Bring it to the lounge.

They all went to the lounge.

Gina: "Gina bring us some Lemon tea"

I laughed.

Gina went close to the lounge door to hear what was being discussed, i joined her.

Jack: I'm just gonna get straight to the point. Janet was studying Medicine in England she finished last year. She's a very bright and nice girl her mother raised her well.

Riley: What does that have to do with me?

Jack: I'm still talking..

Gail: Your uncle and i felt that you and Janet

can make a good couple, you both very educated, both ambitious our family is close with your family your uncle and i have been friends for a long time.

Riley: What do you mean by all of that?

Jack: You have to marry her.

I couldn't believe my ears i put my hand over my mouth. Gina's eyes popped.

Riley: I'm sorry you said what?

Jack: You heard me

Riley: Sorry Jack but that won't happen, i can't marry someone i don't love i hardly even know her.

Gail: There would be a lot of time for knowing each other.

Jack: Janet will be living with us until you guys get married.

Riley: That's pure bull!

Riley walked out, Gina and i quickly went to the kitchen to do what we were doing, Jack came after Riley.

Jack: Riley!

Riley stopped

Jack: You marrying Janet that's final!

Riley: i won't marry someone i don't love!

Jack: You will! It's not always about love do you think i loved your mom when i married her?

Ehh did he acknowledge that Gina and i we were in the kitchen

Jack: Janet is beautiful, intelligent, she was raised well, she's still a Virgin she loves horse riding and music she plays the piano she knows how to sing you have a lot in common what's there not to love

?

Riley kept quiet.

Jack: or is because you seeing someone else?

Riley looked at me.

Riley: No I'm not

Jack: then you marrying Janet. There's no use in fighting this off you know my word is final!

He walked away with Gina following him with a tray of tea.

Jack: we've been long waiting for that tea. Gina if you can't even make tea then you seriously useless!

It was only me and Riley at the kitchen.

Riley: There's no way I'm marrying that girl.

I kept quiet. He came to hug me from the back as i was "washing dishes"

Me: What are you doing? You know Jack can't see us.

He gently bit me on my neck it was ticklish i laughed he turned me around and kissed me.

We were interrupted by someone clearing their throat and it was Janet.

Janet: Riley Papa Jack wants to see you

Riley: I'll be right back

He kissed me and went. This Janet girl came to me..

Her: keep your flithy hands off my man!

Me: Your man?

Her: I loved Riley ever since I was 13 now my dream of marrying him is coming true and I'm not gonna let you or anyone ruin it! And we don't associate with your type!

Me: What do you mean my type?

Her: You black! I'm allergic to black people!

He then walked back to the lounge. I stood there like jesus please help me before I drop this barbie doll down like a bad habit. My phone rang i took it out and answered i didn't

recognise the number.

Me: Hello

Caller: Anathi is me

Me: There's nobody whose called "me"

Caller: It's Sfiso

Me: Ufunani wena! (what do you want)

Him: how is my baby? Has he started kicking yet?

Me: Your baby?

Him: we didn't use protection so you have to be pregnant right now.

Ehh this guy!

Save

Rate (30 Ratings)

[06/17, 17:14] Ron: PART 21 LOVE KNOWS NO COLOR

Sfiso was really gonna be a pain in the butt.

Me: There is no baby!

Him: No there is..

Me: I aborted you damn fool!

Yes i wanted to get back at him for leaving me stranded that night.

Him: You aborted my baby?

Me: That's what i just said

Him: You took my chances of being a fath..

Me: Ohh please sfiso don't act like you was gonna be a good father!

Him: how did you know if you never gave me a chance

Me: You left me stranded when i was homeless i almost got raped and now you telling me that wena you was gonna be a good father!

Him: I'm sorry about that again..

Me: Sfiso please don't ever call me again.

I hung up this guy really was crazy.

There was nothing to do around the house, Gina came to me and we went to sit outside in the garden drinking Ice tea which tasted horrible.

Gina: Let's go out tonight

Me: It's Monday

Gina: So?

Me: some of us have to work tomorrow.

Her: Come on Anny I'll go crazy in this house with Jack i need air.

Me: Fine we'll go out

Gina: Thank you.

Me: tell me Janet and Riley do they really go way back?

Gina: i don't know it's my first time seeing her.

Me: and Gail?

Gina: she's been our family friend for a really long time I'm surprised she has a child.

Me: she's also from Germany?

Gina: No she's an Afrikaaner, racist to the core

Me: and she made her child racist too.

We were interrupted by Thabo.

Thabo: Madam Gina Sir Jack is calling for you

Gina: Thabo i told you to stop calling me

Madam I'm too young for that word I'm 21.

Gina stood up and left. I waited for her to come back she didn't so i stood up took the glasses to the house and i saw Gail and Jack going out of the gate. I got in and rinsed the glasses Gina and Janet showed up.

Gina: sorry i kept you waiting Anny.

Me: It's okay, you look irritated what's wrong?

Gina: Jack and Gail went out to handle some business and i have to babysit your highness here.

I giggled a little.

Janet: I'm old Gina you don't have to babysit me

Gina: Tell that to your mother and Jack. Anyway Anny I'm going to see some friends

see you in a little while

She looked at Janet.

Gina: Let's go your highness.

I laughed and went to look for my man.

He was in his room wearing nothing but a towel around his waist and his hair was wet and that body hmmm.

Me: going somewhere?

Him: Yes snuggle bunny have to go and see the sight again for the mine.

Me: in my hood?

Him: Yes heard that Area has a lot of coal and apparently to Jack that's good

Me: it does have coal, and be careful snuggle bunny remember the last time you almost got stabbed

Him: And you had to save me, ya ya ya ya i know.

Me: Who you going with? Should i come with you?

Him: Chill wonderwoman Jack organized "protection"

Me: Okay.

I watched him while he was getting dressed Lord i was getting a bit turned on busy thinking about what we could do plus it's been a while since we actually did it.

Him: And what you gonna do the whole day?

My mind was far away.

Him: Hello??? Earth to Anathi.

Me: What?

Him: What you thinking about?

Me: nothing much.

I noticed the scars Gina told me about on his back when he went to get the t-shirt.

Me: Snuggle bunny?

Him: Yes?

Me: How did you get those scars on your back?

He put on his shirt.

Him: i used to fall alot when i was young while playing.

Me: You fell on your back each time?

Him: Yes.

Me: i don't believe you, looks more like you got

whooped.

I saw his facial expression changing.

Him: want to tell me something Anathi?

Me: No

The way he reacted to the scars made me scared to tell him about his mother. Did Jack kill her? This is not my fight plus Jack will kill me if i say a word.

Him: Okay I'm going, see you later.

Me: Okay bye.

He came to kiss me and walked to the door, but he spanked my ass hard before walking out.

Me: ouch! What you do that for?

Him: because i want that Ass in my bed tonight woman! you hear?

Me: is that a command?

Him: Yes It is!

Me: You full of it!

Him: so I've been told.

He left. I was gonna be bored alone. I went to watch tv downstairs till Gina and Janet came back in the afternoon,they were arguing

Gina: Janet i don't wanna see your face right now!

Janet: Why? Is it because i spoke the truth.

Me: What truth?

Gina: This person offended my lesbian friends telling them being gay is wrong they gonna burn in hell.

Janet: It's the truth.

Gina: get out of my face!

Janet sat down on the couch.

Janet: And you? Don't you have some cleaning to do? This is not a motel to just sit and watch TV.

Me: if you want your body to come up missing
keep talking..

She kept quiet.

Gina: It's 15:00 let's get ready

Janet: ready to go where?

Gina: to a club

Me: we taking her along?

Gina: she's my puppy for the day remember?

Janet: we going to which club?

Me: do you do clubs?

Jane: Ohh Yes i do. I done did them alot in
England

Gina: Really? Miss goody two shoes like you
goes to clubs?

Janet: there's a lot you don't know about me, let
me go bath i have a special outfit for this.

She went upstairs Gina and i looked at each

other like “Ookaay what just happened”.

I went to my room and bathe, i took out an outfit after bathing was a skinny Jean, a black muscle vest, and black heels, yes since Janet took me out shopping she has changed my wardrobe

I got dressed and ya i looked good, i tucked in the vest then put a belt around that had a buckle which was written “Sexy” i still had a bit of a big tummy since the pregnancy so i decided to throw in a leather short jacket. I had a bit of a cleavage pregnancy helped with the boobs. I combed my hair since it was still short and put on make up. I took a clutch bag and met up with Gina in the house. She was wearing a short skirt, with heels, a muscle vest and a leather jacket too she had a pony tail.

Gina: hmm you look great

Me: So do you. Shall we leave?

Gina: Miss thing is not done.

Me: What is she doing its 17:00 already

Gina: dressing up.

We sat and waited for her. She finally came down at 18:00 she looked like a queen of England wearing a two piece. A purple skirt, with a Jacket that was buttoned, stockings and 3 kota heels. She even had a hat on, carrying a small bag.

Gina: What on earth?

Janet: I know right.

Me: Janet were do you think we going? To eat dinner with the president of the United States?

Her: No Silly! You guys didn't specify if we were going to a book club or what so that's why I'm over dressed.

Gina: SOS! Someone please save our souls for real.

Me: I'm sure you even have granny panties on?

Janet: Yes and they comfortable and why are you guys dressed like tramps? You should look respectable

Gina: Can we go before i bust someone.

We walked out to Gina's car and went to some white club,we walked In and the disco light was on.

Janet: When you said club you where actually talking about this?

Gina: Yes!

Janet: Sorry im not wild,can i go home

Gina: Whose gonna drive you home?.

Janet: I'll call Riley or Jack or my mom!

Me: Like hell you will.

I took her bag opened it and took out her phone.

Janet: What are you doing?

Me: You ain't calling nobody.

Gina: Janet stop being uptight come on mingle around.

We mingled around but Shame white people were boring and the club was boring the music was worse! Janet and i ended up sitting on the couch looking bored.

Gina went and danced with a few friends bought a few shots and a hennessey.

Janet leaned to me.

Janet: I'm not familiar with clubs but i don't think they supposed to be this boring.

Me: Tell me about it.

Gina came to us.

Gina: You guys look bored.

Me: We are.

Gina: it is kinda boring today.

I thought of Diamond and her club.

Me: i have an idea let's go.

We went to the car with our Hennessey and called Diamond she was happy to hear from me i told her to meet us in that club. She agreed and i directed Gina to the club, we got there and Diamond was standing at the door waiting for us, we got out.

Gina: Is this safe?

Me: Yeap you'll like it.

Janet: there's a lot of Negroes here i wanna go home.

Me: don't use that word here you'll get your throat cut, just act natural.

We went up to Diamond i introduced her to Gina and Janet and we went in. We chilled in the VIP section again people were looking at us Janet was dead scared.

Me: Janet black people don't bite relax.

Janet: speak for yourself I've never been in a room full of soo much N.. Full of people before.

Diamond went to get alcohol.

Gina: This is a strip club?

Me: Yeap enjoy all these Asses.

Gina: i soo love you right now.

Me: don't cheat on Jamie

Gina: What she don't know won't hurt her.

Diamond got us alcohol, Janet was drinking coke i poured whiskey in her coke.

Janet: This Coke taste weird.

Me: It's specially made for you.

I wanted to shut her up she was irritating.

We drank and danced Janet was getting drunk, i looked at Gina she was kissing some lesbian they went to a booth. Diamond got us cocaine and what the hack we did it i even forced Janet to do it,we were stoned. Gina came back was shocked we were doing cocaine.

Me: i won't tell if you don't tell.

Gina: This is too much we leaving it's 23:00 already.

Gina wasn't that drunk because she was driving. We went outside some niggas were smoking weed i asked they gave me and i smoked Janet wanted too and Gina refused. Janet and i we were soo stoned we couldn't stop laughing. We got home all laughing and singing Gina was trying to calm us down. We got to The lounge and threw ourselves on the couches Janet fell on the floor i laughed.

Gina: Guys keep quiet you will wake up Jack.

Me: Who is Jack?

Janet: we've never heard of him!

We looked at each other and Laughed.

Janet and i started singing loud!

Us: im on that good kush and alcohol!

Janet: Wait what is kush?

Me: Who knows?

Gina: It's weed what you guys were smoking!

Janet: Wow!

Me: As long as I got you bitches I don't need no one!!!!

Riley came downstairs as soon as I saw him I got up and tried running to him but I was bumping into things.

Me: Snuggle bunny!

He came up to me and held me.

Riley: What's going on here?

Me: I wanna make love to you, I want to sit on your face and..

And.. And... Eat my pussy like a.. Like a cup cake.

I was laughing.

Me: Get it like a cup cake?

Riley: Are you drunk?

Me: A lil

I kissed him and he pulled back.

Him: Snuggle bunny are you high on kush?

Me: You also know what kush is?

Riley: Is that Janet on the floor?

She went to Janet.

Riley: Gina how can you do this? Jack is gonna kill you!

Gina: I know i messed up..

Me: Who is Jack!! I say Fuck Jack!!!

Riley: Go and shut big mouth over there while i get this one in bed..

Gina came to me to make me keep quiet. Then Gail came downstairs, she lost her mind when she saw Janet.

Gail: Oh my Goodness what's wrong with my

baby?

She went to her, Riley already picked her up.

Riley: uhm she's... She's a bit uhm..

Me: She is stoned we did weee..

Gina put her hand over my mouth to shut me up.

Gail: she looks drunk and wasted. Gina what did you do to my baby!

Gina: don't blame me I'm not even drunk.

Gail: Gosh Riley I'm sorry I'm soo embarrassed right now, please don't change your mind about marrying her.

Me: He ain't Mar..

Gina pressed her hand hard over my mouth.

Riley took Janet upstairs to her bedroom with Gail shouting behind them..

Gina: You going to bed too

Me: Nooo the night is still young

I took the hennessey from the table.

Me: look there's still hennessey left.

Gina: but not for you, you done.

Riley came back after a few minutes while Gina and i were arguing.

Riley: I'll take it from here..

He put me over his shoulder like a sack of potatoes and took me to his bedroom.

Him: Take off your clothes and get in bed.

Me: I'm hungry.

Him: You'll eat in the morning.

Me: Fine let me go and change.

I took my hennessey with.

Him: hope you not drinking in the bathroom

Me: nope..

Him: I'm getting you some coffee.

I took off my clothes was hard i kept on falling

then i put one of his t. Shirts it was short and a bit tight.

He came back.

Him: Snuggle bunny here's your coffee.

I stood at the bathroom door with the hennessey..

Me: Tonight it's just gonna be me, u&hennessey pretty boy.

He put the cup on the dressing table and smiled a lil.

Him: let me lock the door.

He locked the door i put the hennessey down and ran to him, he picked me up with my legs wrapped around his waist,while kissing him hard i swear i was gonna take his lip with me, i don't know why i was soo horny.

Save

Rate (29 Ratings)

[06/17, 17:15] Ron: PART 22 LOVE KNOWS NO COLOR

I wish i could tell what happened last night, if Riley and i had crazy sex or not because I didn't remember anything. I woke in the morning with a terrible headache the room was spinning a little. I wanted to sleep again mara i have to wake up and get to work before Jack gives me trouble. I woke up and there was a note next to my pillow which read "had to go to work, enjoy your day i love you" I smiled as i read that. I got out of bed to wash my face in the bathroom then picked up my clothes on the bathroom floor got dressed and went downstairs. I didn't

know what time was it so i was sneaking out. I got to the kitchen and saw Janet with her mom talking, i went to stand by the door hiding a bit for them not to notice me.

Gail: I'm disappointed in you Janet i don't wanna lie! I did not raise you like that, i was so embarrassed when Riley saw you in that state.

Janet: Ek is jamer Mama (I'm sorry mama)

Janet was wearing glasses and her voice was scratchy.

Gail: Sorry won't save you! You have shamed me, i don't know you anymore Janet i don't know if Riley would still wanna marry you.

Janet: Ill try to talk to him..

Gail: You won't do that! I will fix your mess as always! You belong on a street corner that's were you deserve to be right now! You are a trash, rubbish, and Garbage!

Janet was tearing up.

Gail: get out of my sight you disgust me!

Yoooh this woman is evil shame! She just drank she didn't kill no one.

Janet went pass me all looking down and went to her room.

I went to the kitchen passing Gail who was standing there.

Gail: What is your plan?

Me: What plan?

Gail: Janet told me about this fling nonsense you have with Riley!

Me: I don't know what you talking about Mam.

Her: You know exactly what I'm talking about! Look you ought to leave Riley alone you are not his type, everything is wrong about you and worse you are a maid!

I was getting pumped up.

Me: i love Riley and he loves Me too..

Gail: keep on lying to yourself like that. Riley loves Janet he just doesn't know it yet.

Me: If Riley loves Janet then why are you having this conversation with me?

She didn't know what to say. Yeap that's how you shut up a bitch!

I went to my room and slept, if Jack fires me then it's fine I'm tired shame. I slept the whole morning and i was woken up by a phone call, i answered without checking the caller ID.

Me: Hello *sleepy voice*

Sfiso: you really killed my baby?

Me: Gosh sfiso!!!

Him: Anathi listen to me..

Me: i don't wanna hear shit you have to say right now!

Sfiso: Anathi i need help I'm going crazy..
Please he..

I hung up my phone and blocked his number. I couldn't sleep anymore i woke up and wore leggings, a t. Shirt and sleepers. I went back to the house and Jack was at the kitchen. I immediately did a U-turn.

Jack: have you told anyone?

Me: Sir?

Him: The conversation you overheard that other day, have you told anyone?

Me: No sir

Him: Keep it that way because I would hate to see you accidentally get killed.

I swallowed my saliva.

Him: You look very young to die, and put on your maid uniform you a maid! A nobody! A kaffer do what you do best and that is washing dishes and scrubbing the floor.

He walked away. Ehh today everyone is on my case what did i do exactly?

I didn't wanna anger Jack i went to put on my maid uniform and came to clean. I won't lie i was very tired from last night. Jack was following me making sure i clean thoroughly, he made me scrub the carpet from 4 bedrooms a long passage and the lounge, i was getting tired. The way Jack was soo cruel he had a hoover mara he forced me to use a srubbing brush and a bucket if i stop to take a small nyana break i would feel a hard slap at the back of my head. I wanted to cry mara i stopped myself i wasn't gonna give him the satisfaction. Gail came in i was just finished with the two bedrooms i was now doing the 3rd bedroom.

Gail: She's still cleaning?

When did she wake up Jack she's supposed to be long done had she woken up at 4am.

Jack: she's lazy i don't know why i hired her, i told you get me a white maid!

Gail: Never! this black maids are good they work

hard remember they were once slaves.

I felt Jack kicking Me a lil at the back of my head while i was still kneeling there.

Jack: this Negro is Lazy!

Gail: Negro? You give her too much respect she's a kaffer, a baboon! Look how ugly she is i feel like vomiting just by looking at her.

Jack laughed..

Jack: i would rather die than marry a black woman!

Gail: Filthy things!

Yoooh i couldn't stand it anymore i stood up with soo much Anger.

Me: I'm black but my skin looks lighter than yours bitch!

sarcasm

She slapped me. She was fumbling.

Gail: look how she's talking to me Jack, a

servant!

Jack: who do you think you are talking to Gail like that?

Me: Sorry sir but I'm human i also have feelings, i get hurt too..

Jack set out a loud evil laugh.

Jack: did you hear that Gail? She's a human being!

Gail: You are not a human being, you are an ugly creature! You are the result of some cruel genetic mutation

She spat on me.

Gail: The reason why she feels royalty is because Riley and Gina treat her like royalty!

You won't believe what she did? She took Janet and Gina drinking yesterday to a club filled with kaffers! What if the girls got raped Jack?

Yoooh i saw Jack's eyes flashing with soo much

evil.

Jack: She did what?

Gail: Janet can testify to this.

She went and called Janet, came back holding her hand.

Gail: Tell Papa Jack what happened.

Janet looked at me then looked down.

Gail: look at how my child is even scared of her.

Jack: Talk my child She cannot harm you.

Janet: She.. She took me And Gina to a black club. I said i wanna go home but she refused she took my phone, then she..

Gail put her hand on Janet's shoulder who was crying now.

Jack: i know this is difficult for you child but please continue..

Janet: She spiked my drink, made me do drugs, mama it was horrible.

Gail hugged her.

Gail: My poor baby.

Jack: You have gone too far, Only God knows what else you did to this poor child, starting from today you shall be treated like a slave!

Gail go call Thabo.

I stood there scared of what Jack might do to me.

Gail went out to call Thabo.

Jack: Go rest my child I'll take you to the doctor later to make sure that the cocaine is out of your system.

Janet: there's more

Jack: Talk child

Janet: She almost had me raped

Me: What? Janet don't lie

Jack slapped me hard that i fell.

Jack: Go Janet I'll deal with this thing.

Janet walked away.

Gail came back with Thabo who had a rough rock. Jack took the rock from Thabo. What is he gonna do?

Jack: Gail i leave this in your hands it was your child that was violated.

Gail: say no more.

Jack: just tell me if she gives you a problem.

Gail told Thabo to take me outside he did,then he raised my maid dress up a little. Gail came to scratch my knees with the rock it was painful the skin was peeling off i was crying.

Gail: Stop making noise! Do you want me to call Jack? His worse than me!

Me: I'm sorry...

Gail: Sorry for what?

Me: disrespecting you

She stopped and looked at me.

Her: there's one more thing i want from you.

I wondered what it was.

Her: i want you to stay away from Riley do you hear me?

Me: Sorry i can't Mam i love..

Gail: Don't even say those words! Riley can never love a person like you! He must be under some love spell!

Gail went inside the house fetched salt and poured it on the ground.

Gail: kneel down here

Was this woman crazy mara.

Me: No please Madam Gail..

Thabo grabbed me and made me kneel on the salt that was the ultimate punishment. While i was kneeling there crying we heard a car.

Gail: Don't just stand there Thabo go check who

it is, if it's Riley distract him, he can't see this i heard his very fond of this thing!

Thabo rushed to the gate.

Gail: if you ever breath a word to Riley about this I'll have Jack cut off your head and feed you off to the birds! Now go to your room,especially when he hears you been all over his son! Now go to your room!

I stood up and i was in soo much pain, walking was painful i went to my room locked the door went to the bathroom to wash off the salt i was crying shit was painful. After washing the salt off i laid on the floor crying, i was too much in pain and bleeding from my knees. I heard a knock on the door after a few minutes.

Riley: Snuggle bunny are you there?

I kept quiet.

Riley: Anathi open!

I was trying to stop myself from crying but it

was hard because i had hiccups. I stood up and slowly walked to the door to make sure i locked, i was sniffing and the hiccups were bad.

Riley: Anathi i can hear you sniffing.

Eish this is gonna be bad.

Him: i have a spare key if you don't open I'll get it and open.

I had to open I had no choice.

Me: coming just give me a few minutes.

I went to change my uniform then i cut my t-shirt and wrapped it around my knees and put on leggings yoooh was painful i cried mostly because they tight,i couldn't let Riley find out about this.

Riley: Anathi open what's wrong?

I walked up to the door wiping my tears and opened the door, he already had a serious look on his face.

Him: Are you crying?

I shook my head no.

Him: Anathi look at me.

I looked down.

He lifted my chin up.

I couldn't stop the tears i cried he got in and hugged me tight..

Him: What's wrong?

I didn't say anything.

Him: You know i hate it when you cry like this,who made my baby cry?

Me: just hold me tight for a few minutes.

He locked the door then held me. Standing was difficult i wanted to sit down.

Me: i wanna sit down.

Him: Okay come.

I tried keeping up a normal walk mara it was

hard shame he saw that i was struggling to walk.

Him: Anathi what's wrong?

Me: i.. It's nothing Riley.

Him: Anathi you struggling to walk you can't tell me it's nothing, did someone hurt you?

Me: No i... I had an accident

Him: What accident?

Me: i fell hard on the concrete and hurt my knees.

Him: Let me see

He came to touch me i stopped him.

Me: Please don't touch they painful.

Riley: Anathi tell..

Me: Riley please i don't wanna argue.

Me: fine I'll take the concrete story even though I know you lying.

He sat me on the bed and put his arm around my waist and i laid on his shoulder.

Him: You know Anathi I'll literally kill anyone who hurts you, because when they hurt you they hurt me, you my heart and it kills me more when i see you crying.

I didn't say anything.

Him: did you take pain killers for the pain

Me: No

He got up and got me pain killers and i drank and he held me tight again

Him: i love you never forget that

Me: i love you too

Him: don't you wanna lie down a bit.

Me: Okay

He helped me lie down.

Me: don't leave me

Him: I'm not gonna leave you im gonna lie right next to you.

He laid behind me and put his hand around me hugging me tight.

Him: want me to sing you a song?

I nodded yes..

Him: which song?

Me: Any..

He started singing..

Him: You give me something

That makes me scared alright..

This could be nothing

But I'm willing to give it a try..

Please give me something

Because someday I might know my heart..

I closed my eyes with the last tears falling from the sound of his beautiful voice, i loved this

man soo much,he knows how to pierce my heart with love.

[06/17, 17:17] Ron: PART 23 LOVE KNOWS NO COLOR

I slept to the sound of Riley's voice.... I woke up to a terrible nightmare, well i wasn't sure if it was a nightmare or if it was Real. I heard Sma's voice again saying "I'm here Anathi, I'm right here" i woke up screaming out the word "Sma" and that woke Riley up who had passed out next to me.

Him: Are you alright?

Me: Yes just a terrible nightmare

My heart was beating Way too fast i was even struggling to breath i was hyperventilating, the way that voice sounded soo real it was like it's in the room that really scared me.

Riley: You don't look good what's wrong?

I couldn't speak i was panicking that i couldn't breath and my heart was beating like it would break.

Riley: Try breathing in and out very slow.

How can this nigga tell me to breath in and out slow when I'm having a heart attack!!!

Me: I'm dying.. Heart attack

Him: You not dying and it's not a heart attack you just having a panick attack.

I wondered what's that. Riley was busy trying to get me to calm down and breath until eventually i came down and did exactly what he said. After a few minutes the so called panick attack was seizing.

Me: i really thought i was dying

Him: You cannot die from a panic attack

Me: What is it? It sounds like a fancy disease

He laughed a lil'

Him: It's not a fancy disease. It's just your brain not being able to distinguish between real danger and not real danger.

Me: What does that mean?

Him: panick attack or anxiety attack occurs when the brain is misled into thinking that you in danger, so with that it triggers the flight or fight response that's why your body reacts because it's thinking that it's in danger that's why your heart beats fast and you struggle to breath.

Me: Yoh how do you know soo much?

He smiled

Him: i read. Just know that a panic attack won't harm you or kill you.

Me: Seemed like it was gonna kill me

Him: They can be uncomfotable sometimes.

Me: What time is it?

Him: It's Time for you to go bath, then I'll make you something to eat and you can go back to bed.

Me: That's unnecessary I can take care of myself.

Him: let me spoil you for tonight.

I smiled.

Him: You actually look beautiful when you smile
I blushed.

Me: Really you think I'm beautiful?

Him: i don't think so i know so.

Me: You playing with me right now.

Him: You don't think that you beautiful?

I shook my head no

Me: i don't even know how you fell for me,
there's a lot of barbie dolls you can get, like
Janet.

Him: Yea you probably right, but I'm not at all attracted to her.

Me: Why?

Him: because she is not you.

I smiled and looked down, he kissed me on my cheek.

Him: Go bath and I'll make you something to eat.

I slowly made my way to the bathroom which took forever to bath because of my injury.

I went back to the bedroom only wearing a towel that was above knee level, he looked at my knees.

Him: Still won't tell me what happened?

Me: No

Him: Okay I'm not gonna push.

I wanted to tell him about Gail and Jack but i didn't wanna start trouble i mean Jack is a ruthless man and his capable of anything.

Riley: come here.

I went and sat on top of him, but with my back facing him and he wrapped his hands around me.

Riley: i miss the Penthouse days when it was just you, me and the girls.

Me: i miss those days too.

Him: That's why I'm thinking that tomorrow we should move out.

Okay that was a bit of a shock.

Me: Move out to were?

Him: To the Penthous for Good. I'm tired of sneaking around when i have to see you, and the way my uncle treats you i don't like it, so I'm saving myself from a murder case because if he touches you I'm gonna kill him.

And that is why i cannot tell him about Jack and Gail.

Me: I'd really like that, moving back to the Penthouse, and we made good memories there

Him: I know what you mean.

Shuuuuu! That was a big relief at least i don't have to see Jack anymore.

Him: So dress up and I'll make you something to eat.

I stood up and put lotion on my body Riley was starring at me.

Me: It's rude to stare..

Him: then let me go because I'm getting turned on, let me go and get takeaways.

He stood up and went. I finished off putting lotion on my body and wore my Pjs, the Pj pants where long so at least they hid my knees. Riley came back after some few hours with pizza, ginger ale cool drink, and snacks.

We sat on my bed Eating and talking, i really enjoyed my night with him. He decided to leave

at around 22:00

Him: Let me leave before Jack sends out a search party.

I laughed and walked him to the door.

Me: i really had a great time with you

Him: me too

He kissed me goodnight and left. I went back to my bed all smiling like a teenager who got asked out on a date by her crush. Sleeping was hard because of the Sma's situation and the panick attack thing was back, it was a tough night i couldn't sleep at all, I only slept at around 4am.....i woke up the following day looked at the time and it was 11am shiiiit! Jack was gonna murder me. I quickly got out of bed and eish my knees had no mercy on me. I went to the bathroom bathe and wore my uniform then made my way to the house.

I found Gail reading a novel in the lounge.

Gail: It's good to be you, you just decide to come to work whenever you feel like it.

Her bullshit won't get to Me shame, she can have her one minute of being a Madam today I'm leaving!

Her: Just know that you won't get paid.

Me: i don't care none about that.

She threw the novel at me.

Her: don't talk to me like that ever again!

She stood up and came to me.

Her: I can have you taken out anyday that's how much you don't matter to me!

Gina came in.

Gina: What's going on here?

Gail: Just a disrespectful kaffer!

Gina: We don't say that in this house!

Gail: i don't know why you like to defend this

thing!

She walked out.

Me: so help me God that i don't kill this woman.

Gina: Don't mind her that much she's a Barking dog.

If only she knew that Gail actually bites.

Gina: come I'm sitting by the pool, i was actually getting a drink.

She took a glass and poured juice then we went to the back, Riley was sitting there with a white guy and a white girl.

Me: why didn't you tell me that you have company.

Gina: You mean those 3?Agh they not company.

Me: I am going back to the house.

As i was walking Riley called me, eish i don't want people seeing me in that maid uniform.

I went up to them, and sat on top of him.

The guy: let me guess this is the famous An...

Riley: Anathi..

Him: Yes that..

Riley: Just call her anny

The girl: Already giving each other pet names that's sweet.

Hai that was an embarrassing situation.

Riley: I see you still have that Same attitude that you had back in high school.

Girl: I'll never change for anyone.

Gina: Since no one seems to be doing the introductions I'll do them.

Riley: Sorry about that just got caught up in the conversation. Snuggle bunny this is Brad and Jennifer they my friends we been friends since from high school, and you guys know Anathi already.

Jennifer: nice to finally meet you, he doesn't

stop talking about you.

Ahh i blushed.

Brad: How about we all go out tonight

Riley: That be nice, can be a double date

Me: ohw you guys are dating

Jennifer: Yes we doing 10years this year

Gina: That's an inspiration no young couple last for that long.

Riley whispered in my ear

Riley: This could be us..

I coughed and looked down.

Gina: What's the secret?

Jennifer: honesty. We always honest with each other about everything.

Brad: And trust too, that's important

Aike this could never be us,i mean I've kept alot of things from Riley.

Gina: A toast to this couple that's doing 10years this year.

They all raised up their glasses, unfortunately I did not have one.

Riley: You can share with me

He drank a bit and gave the glass to me.

Brad: Hey Riley did you guys buy a volvo car?

Riley: No why?

Brad: A volvo was parked by your house when we came in, a Black Volvo S60

That is Sfiso's car or his parent's rather.

Gina: Speaking of that car I've seen it on our Street for a while now, it's actually a black guy driving.

The drink choked me and i coughed.

Riley: Are you okay snuggle bunny?

I nodded yes.

Me: Can i be excused.

I stood up and went to my room. What the hell was sfiso playing at mara. I was pacing around in the room when Gina came to check if i was okay, i told her I'm fine and she left Me there. Thabo came to fetch me told me Gail want me to do some chores. I went to the house and she wanted me to do her laundry and Janet's laundry which was alot...i did the laundry till Riley came to save me that we should go out his friends will meet us at the restaurant they went home to change, it was now around 14:30. I went to change the uniform, wore leggings and a shirt you can't keep me away from leggings shame, i also wore my ankle boots. We went to his car and drove off, when he turned the corner i saw Sfiso's car parked there, Riley didn't seem to notice that it was the same car Gina was talking about. We went to Maxis and sat waiting for Jennifer and Brad we just ordered drinks.

Me: So when are we going to the Penthouse?

Him: we can leave after this lunch with my Friends.

Me: I forgot to call the girls and tell them.

Him: Let's surprise them.

We sat there for an hour.

Riley: I think we can order i don't think they coming anymore

Me: i was starting to get hungry.

Riley laughed. While we were ready to order i heard a voice behind me saying "Hi Anathi" i looked back and it was sfiso. He looked very disturbed like he hasn't slept for days.

Him: I need to talk to you

Me: I don't wanna talk to you.

Him: Anathi Please

Me: i don't wanna talk to you please leave!

Riley: i think the lady has made herself clear.

Sfiso: i will leave if you could explain why you killed my baby.

My Lord that is what i was scared off.

Me: What are you talking about? You high on something?

Sfiso: You know what I'm talking about, us having sex in my car that night we went to a "business function" remember? You should remember because i fucked you in my car that was parked at your boyfriend's gate.

Thixo! (lord) what is Sfiso trying to achieve.

Riley's mood changed immediately.

I didn't know how i was gonna explain myself.

Sfiso: don't act like you don't remember! I bet your so called boyfriend doesn't know how much of a slut you are!

He looked at Riley

Sfiso: I'm sure you wasn't gonna know about

this had i not said anything, you see Anathi is good in lying and covering things up.

Riley: Unfortunately you late, Anathi long told me about that.

Sfiso looked shocked.

Sfiso: She did?

Riley: Yes you see me and my girlfriend we don't hide anything from each other, we very honest in our relationship ain't we Anathi?

I smiled a lil nodding yes.

Riley: If that was all that you had to say Please leave us In peace before i have you thrown out.

Sfiso resisted going out that one of the waiters called security and he was thrown out. How was i gonna explain myself to Riley?

He looked at me with a serious face.

Him: I'm gonna ask you this and I want you to be honest with me.

Tears were threatening to escape my eyes.

Riley: Were you raped?

I nodded yes

Riley: Anathi don't!

My throat raised no words, it was like i had a lump

Him: I'm trying to get the truth here so that i can fix us and i cannot do that if you keep on lying to me, for the last time Anathi did you get raped?

I shook my head no

Riley: You did sleep with him? In his car parked at my house?

I shook my head no, he got angry and hit the table hard, people were now looking at us.

Riley: Let's go home..

We went to his car and he drove home all silent. We got home and we walked in.

I held his hand. Janet was at the kitchen.

Me: Riley please his not important, what we did it was just.. It was a stupid mistake! I love you Riley..

He looked at me and went upstairs. Leaving me there crying.

Janet: Trouble in paradise?

I looked at her all pissed she got the message and left, i went to Riley's room he was now playing music. i opened the door and he was sitting on the bed looking down with his hand on his forehead like he was thinking.

Me: Riley please let me explain.

He took the remote next to him and increased the volume the song he was playing i felt it was meant for me because the lyrics

went like:

I CAN'T TAKE NO MORE OF THIS, I'M PACKING NOW IT'S OVER BITCH!..

I SHOULD HAVE NEVER STAYED IN THIS

RELATIONSHIP, I KNEW YOU WAS A FUCKEN SLUT.. A FUCKEN CUNT.. ONLY LOOKED OUT FOR A NUT.. BUT I'M DONE AND NO MORE GAMES.. THIS IS REAL I'M DONE WITH YOU.. DON'T CALL ME I WON'T CALL YOU.. I NEVER WANNA FUCK WITH YOU.. IT'S TOO LATE TO APOLOGISE.. LOOKED ME RIGHT INTO MY EYES AND TOLD ME ALL THIS FUCKEN LIES!

That was a clear a message..

Rate (27 Ratings)

[06/17, 17:23] Ron: PART 24 LOVE KNOWS NO COLOR

I didn't wanna disturb him, i closed the door and

went to my room. I got there threw myself in bed and cried. I didn't wanna be disturbed i locked the door. I love Riley and i don't know why i keep on hurting him like this. I mean i don't wanna hurt me, i don't mean to hurt him it just happens i have a lot of shit going on. I felt the panic attack again i swear this thing is gonna irritate me. I laid there all day asking God what i did? What's wrong with me? Why do i always hurt people that i love. I cried and cried and cried till i got a headache. Someone came Knocking at my door, who could it be mara at 18:00pm. Got out of bed and made my way to the door, i opened the door and it was Thabo.

Me: What now?

Him: They want you in the house.

Me: I'm seriously not in the mood for this people!

Thabo: don't keep them waiting if you know what's good for you.

I quickly made my way to the house, Jack and Gail were already waiting for me at the kitchen.

Me: Thabo told me that you were calling for Me

Jack: Gail tells me that you have been slacking today she wanted you to do the laundry and you went about your own ways.

The is no point in saying anything, especially since i didn't know If Riley still had my back.

Me: Sorry i had an emergency to attend.

Jack: I pay you to work, i don't pay you to attend emergencies! My time is my time. If you at my house doing your chores anything else can wait! I don't care even if they said your mom was dying you do not neglect your work!

Me: Sorry sir it will never happen again.

I started walking to my room.

Gail: Where are you going?

Me: To my room

Gail: and whose gonna finish off the laundry?

Me: It's late..

Jack came to slap Me. if i got money for
Everytime i get slapped I'll be rich by now.

Gail: Get on with it.

I went to the laundry room.

Gail: Don't even think about using the washing
machine you are going to use your hands!

She went and got more laundry, even put clean
clothes, duvets, you name it bitch put it.

Jack came in with what looked like a knobkerrie.

Jack: You going to do this laundry outside!

Outside it was a bit cold were they serious right
now?

I made my way outside following them
everything was ready at the back, two big
basins filled with water one for washing and
one for rinsing.

Gail: kneel and get on with it!

I knelt down but it was hard considering the knee situation, i stood up again.

Gail: i said kneel down!

Me: i can't kneel down you know the situation I have with my knees.

Jack grabbed me at the back of my neck and pushed me down hard i fell on one of the basins.

Jack: we have been spoiling you that's why you don't wanna do anything, but all of that is going to change tonight!

Gail: Get up and fill the water again!

I got up went inside the house while wet like that and the basin had actually cut me a bit on my back i was bleeding. I got a bucket to refill the basin.

Gail: This thing is not smart! When are you going to finish filling up the water if you using a bucket?

Jack: That is why your ancestors were bought by mirrors for the their land

Gail: You going far Jack don't confuse the uneducated girl.

Me: What should i use then?

They looked at me and laughed!

Gail: You are a joke! Your whole race is a joke!
Jack were is Hitler when you need him the most?
He was gonna kill all this black roaches!

Jack: Death should be ashamed taking people like Hitler!

a man of integrity and respect

Who the hell is Hitler i asked myself.

Gail: Get back to it when I come back i want to see this clothes on the washing line!

They both went inside the house. I continued pouring water with the bucket till it was full transported the laundry from the house to were

i was gonna do laundry. I crouched there was no way I was gonna kneel. I washed the laundry at the same time thinking about Riley and how much I've hurt him, he probably hates me right now. After some time i was getting tired and the laundry was not finishing, my knees hurt from all that crouching. I sat back on the grass and prevented myself from crying, I'm stronger than this i can't cry. I was separated from my thoughts by a knobkerrie on my back i jumped, Jack sure had a strong hand because I felt like my bones were gonna break.

Him: I didn't hire you to be lazy, get back to work!!

Now i couldn't stop crying.

Jack: Get back to work!

I crouched

Him: Kneel!.

I'm sure that kneeling was better than the

knobkerrie. I kneeled down clenching my teeth together forcing myself not to scream because my knees were painful .. I did the laundry with Jack next to Me guarding me like a pit bull, i swear the pain i endured there was the kind of pain that i couldn't even wish on my worst enemy. Whenever i would try to stop and catch my breath the knobkerrie would've long made itself to my body. I don't know why i was going through something this painful, was i being punished for my sins?

After a while Jack yawned.

Jack: Lucky for you I'm tired you'll continue tomorrow.

I let out a deep sigh, he still hit me for what? I don't know.

Him: You are ungreatful! Didn't your mother teach you how to say thank you?

Me: Thank you.

Him: Say it like you mean it! Kneel down in front of Me and thank me!

The nerve though! Who did he think he is God?

I did as he said, knelt in front of him and thanked him.

Him: Before you go to sleep clean out this mess.

I was tired and too much in pain to do that. Jack went back to the house, and i sat there crying. Thabo came to me while i was still crying like that..

Thabo: Go to bed I'll clean out everything.

Me: It's my mess I'll clean

Him: No I'll help you go and rest.

I don't know why he was helping me.

He walked me to my room and laid me in bed then went out. I laid in my bed took my phone under the pillow, i wanted to call Riley but i had no idea what I was gonna tell him. I realized

then that talking over the phone would actually be better than talking to him face to face. I dialled his number and no answer. I sent him a lot of messages no reply. I couldn't sleep because of the nightmares, my life was one big mess. I fell asleep at 2am but woke up after 30min because of Sma's voice. I felt like i was going crazy i woke up and sat up straight with my painful knees raised up to my chest and hugging them busy rocking myself back and forth,the voice got louder "Anathi I'm here, look at me Anathi, here" i started screaming while putting my hands on my ears.

Me: Leave me alone! I didn't mean to kill you!... I'm sorry.

I was in tears. I needed someone to tell me that im not crazy right now, i took my phone called Riley no reply, i sent him a message to tell him that im not okay can he please come to my room he didn't. So there i sat until the morning it was getting a bit bright outside i looked at the

time it was 7am. I stood up with my eyes heavy, i was dizzy and sleepy with my body aching. I went to the bathroom and bathe, i slept in the bath but woke up when i couldn't breath i realised it was the panic attack. I got out put on my maid uniform and went to the house. The kitchen and lounge were quiet probably everyone was still asleep, i went back to the kitchen to wash dishes for last night they were also alot.

I could use the dishwasher but Jack is gonna kill me. Riley came in while i was washing dishes he just went to the coffee machine. The was silence between us which i thought it was ridiculous!

I went up to him.

Me: Riley I'm sorry..

He didn't say nothing...

Me: Riley please what do you want me to do? I'll do anything to fix our relationship.

He turned back.

Riley: Now you wanna do something? Anathi i asked you for something simple and that was to be honest with me!

Me: i know Riley and..

Him: You don't know nothing Anathi! You don't know how I'm feeling right now!

Yoh he was very angry and yelling, i even feared Jack might hear.

Me: I wanna fix us Riley i need you in my life.

Him: No you don't! If you did you would stop doing what you doing! You got me soo crazy depressed I'm actually gonna die at the age of 26! And you know what's the most fucked up part about all of this?

Me: What?

Him: It's that i still fucken love you!

Okay at least that's something to work on,

there's still love.

Me: Give me one last Chance.

Him: One last Chance to what? To lie to me again and again and again?

Me: I'll change Riley, I'll stop doing what i do

Him: You won't change Anathi, how many chances did i give you, but you still never changed!

Me: This time I'll change

Him: Please don't make me laugh!

My eyes were filling up with tears.

Him: i wish my mother was here now so she can teach me about how to treat a woman, because there's clearly something that im doing wrong Anathi!

Me: There's nothing you doing wrong.

Him: If there was nothing that im doing wrong you wasn't gonna be doing this things.

Me: i really wanna fix us Riley what should I do?

Him: You'll figure that out on your own because right now i don't believe a word you say!

He took his coffee and went. I love Riley i just wish the was something I could do to show him that i truly love him. There was no use in crying because Riley sounded serious this time around. My phone rang and it was my sister Palesa, i went outside to answer.

Me: Hello

Palesa: Hey stranger

Me: Is everything okay? Is that woman Treating you good?

Palesa: Calm down everything is fine. I just called you because i miss you

My heart was very sore i was too emotional i cried.

Palesa: Anathi what's wrong? Are you crying?

Me: Ya i just miss you alot

Palesa: Don't lie something else is bothering you, Phela wena you don't cry whatever made you cry is big.

What the hack i don't have friends to talk too about this, why not talk to my 15 year old sister.

Me: It's Riley and i.. We broke up.

Palesa: Wtf!!

I was too heartbroken i didn't even take note In her vulgar language.

Her: What happened

Me: I.. I hurt him.

Palesa: Yooh Apologise.

Me: Don't you think I've already did that?

Palesa: Sorry im just trying to help.

What did i expect she's 15.

Palesa: fix it Anathi Riley is a good guy

Me: I wish i knew how Palesa.

Palesa: Apologise, cry, beg him, hold on to his leg,

Ya that's the advice you get from a 15 year old. I heard someone calling her from the background

Me: Whose that?

Her: Friends sorry i have to go..

Me: It's good that you made friends.

Palesa: Ya look Apologise to Riley

Me: I'll try

Her: Okay bye i love you

Me: i love you too.

I went back to the kitchen after the call and barbie doll was making tea

Janet: You should be doing this not me.

I didn't have time to Argue with her. I went and

took over in making the tea. Riley walked in and headed for the door.

Janet: Riley before you leave Papa Jack said we must go horse riding tomorrow since its a Saturday, you know to bond before getting married.

Riley: Janet I'm not gonna marry you, i don't know how many times i have to tell you that! i do not love you.

Janet: Papa Jack said it's not always about love, as time goes on you will learn how to love me.

For someone who studied medicine abroad she surely wasn't smart.

Riley: i don't have time for this i really have to go to work..

Janet: Riley why you doing this to me? I've always dreamt of marrying you ever since i was 13.

Riley: I'm sure 13 year old girls were playing

with dolls back then and you were thinking about Marriage?

I felt like laughing. Janet didn't know what to say, Riley just walked out. Gail came in looking all mad.

Gail: That was stupid Janet! "I've dreamt of marrying you since i was 13" can you be that stupid?

Janet: Sorry mama I'm just not good with words.

Gail: Go upstairs I'll deal with you later!

Gail looked at me then clicked her tongue and went. I did half of the chores and went to bed i was dead tired... I woke up to Gina's knock and her screaming my name, i went to open.

Gina: i have been Knocking!

Me: Sorry i was sleeping.

Her: Come help me with cooking.

Me: Okay I'm coming

Her: Are you okay? You look like hell!

Me: I'm fine just haven't been sleeping good

Gina: Wanna talk about it?

Me: No

Her: Anny you need to talk, bottling things up is not healthy it only leads to destruction.

If only she knew.

Me: Let me wash my face.

I went and washed my face then we went to cook. It was lunchtime already so we did macaroni and cheese with chicken.

Me: Why you guys eating supper in the afternoon?

Gina: Ask Jack.

We cooked then set the table, everyone came to eat except for Riley he wasn't around. I stood there waiting for anyone to say they want something so i could get it.

Jack: I hope this Negro didn't touch my food.

Gina: i cooked alone.

Gail: We should start preparing for the wedding.

Jack: You right the sooner the better

Gina: But Riley doesn't wanna marry Janet.

Jack: Who asked you for your opinion?

Gina kept quiet.

Jack: You are useless Gina just like that maid of ours standing there, Janet is almost your age and she has achieved a lot in life what have you achieved?

Gina: I'm still trying to get into the modelling industry.

Jack: And she's been doing that for 5 years even today no success

Gina: I'm trying Jack

Gail: Try harder by losing weight first They want slim people

Gina: And what's that supposed to mean?

Gail: You a hippo Gina.

Ehh i stood there like really did she cuss out Gina like that?

Jack: Gail is right you look fat

Gina: That's your opinion

Jack: my Opinion is the only one that matters in this house.

Gina stood up and walked out with Gail laughing at her calling her a hippo, Gina went up those stairs crying.

Jack: She should go she is useless to me!

Gail: She's a rubbish like her mother!

Jack: don't talk about that one, the fact that she's still alive and hiding somewhere really makes me mad!

Good shot I'll tell Riley about his mom, maybe that will make him forgive me

Save

Rate (32 Ratings)

[06/17, 17:25] Ron: PART 25 LOVE KNOWS NO COLOR

What Jack said to Gina was not nice.

Gail: I want an omelette

I didn't take note of what she was saying.

She threw a plate at me, as if like that was gonna hurt..

Gail: i said i want an omelette!

I went to the kitchen i didn't know what an omelette was but i knew eggs were involved. I didn't wanna go back and ask her because she was gonna kill me.

I took the pan and stood there thinking deep about the omelette situation. Gail came to the kitchen after 3min

Gail: Are you dead?

What kind of a question is that?

Me: Excuse me?

Gail: Are you dead?

Me: No

Her: Then why is my omelette taking soo long?

Me: Sorry im on it.

Her: you've been on it for 10minutes now.

That was a plain blank lie.

She walked away, i closed my eyes busy repeating the words "how do you make omelette" When i heard a voice behind me saying, "you start by hitting your oil" it was Riley i didn't even hear him getting in.

Me: i didn't hear you come in

Him: that's because you were busy praying to an omelette

I laughed, and he laughed too.

Me: i wasn't praying

Him: "yes you were" (imitating my voice)

I hit him on the shoulder

Me: I don't talk like that.

Him: Yes you do

Me: No i don't

Him: Yes you do snuggle bunny..

I meant yes you do Anathi.

Me: Let me make this omelette before Gail kills me.

Him: Gail is the one who asked you?

Me: Yes..

Him: God gave her two hands for a reason.

Me: She can't seem to do anything for herself.

Him: Go rest I'll do the omelette

Me: Rest?

Him: Asnt like sleep you look tired

Me: I'm not tired

Him: You are.

Me: How do you see that im tired?

Him: Because the colour of your eyes is brown, when you tired the brown colour becomes too faint and your eyelids become heavy that you blink alot to try and convince yourself that you not really tired when actually you dead tired.

Yoooh i was speechless.

Me: How did you pick that up?

Him: Because even though you never honest with me but your eyes are always honest with Me that's how i can tell if you lying to me or not.

Me: What are they telling you right now?

He looked at me.

Him: That you should go and sleep before you get a seizure.

I laughed a little and looked down.

Me: i haven't been sleeping lately

Him: Still have those ridiculous nightmares?

Me: Yes..

Him: Only way to beat Nightmares is to actually face what's bothering you.

Me: What do you mean by that?

Him: just face what you Afraid off rather than running away from it

Gail came in the kitchen again she was already yelling didn't notice Riley.

Her: I swear I'm gonna Strangle this Kaffer how long..

She kept quiet when she saw Riley.

Gail: Riley i didn't know that you were here..

Riley: Kaffer? Really Gail it's 2015 who still uses that word? You an old stone savage i tell you

Gail: Sorry i.. It's just a slip of the tongue.

Riley: Is it the first time calling her that?

Gail: Yes..

This woman is a smooth liar.

Riley: I don't wanna hear that word again, you can call her that when I'm not around, but when I'm around never use that word!

Gail was soo embarrassed.

Riley: And you go to bed.

I went out to sleep, and i slept like a baby until I woke up at 19:00

I washed my face and went into the house. Riley was reading a book in the lounge and Janet was sitting next to him watching TV.

Janet: Where have you been?

Me: I've been sleeping

Janet: wow! And when you were sleeping we were sitting here starving to death that my mother and papa Jack had to go get takeaways! You are Lazy i don't wish to be you.

Me: You have hands for a reason Janet.

Janet: but you were hired to be our hands! So run along now to the kitchen and start with dinner.

Me: You not my boss, you contribute nothing to my salary so I'm gonna tell you this in a polite way, don't fucken tell me what to do!

Riley smiled and winked at me.

Me: now excuse me!

I walked upstairs to check up on Gina, especially after the morning situation. I knocked at her door no respond her door was unlocked so i opened and went in. She was on her bed looked like she's sleeping.

Me: Ahh come on don't tell me you been

sleeping since in the morning.

She didn't say nothing. I went up to her and clapped my hands.

Me: Gina wake up!

Still she didn't move, okay that was strange Gina is not a heavy sleeper.

I noticed beside her that there was a pill container that was empty.

Me: No, No, No Gina wake up!

I shook her she wasn't responding, nor breathing either.

I ran to Riley.

Me: Riley come upstairs

Riley: why? What's wrong

Me: It's Gina!

Riley stood up and came to me we went back to Gina's room with Janet following us, Riley tried waking her up but she didn't.

Riley: Anathi take my car keys from my pocket we taking her to the hospital, and take the bottle of pills too. I took the pill container and his car keys we rushed down, while he was carrying Gina, i unlocked the car we went inside the car, i sat at the back with Gina who was now bleeding from her nose while Janet and Riley sat at the front.

Riley was driving recklessly i was hoping we make it to the hospital without getting involved in an accident. We got to The hospital he rushed her in while i locked the car. The nurses didn't waste time they took her to an emergency room we gave them the pill container too.

We sat there waiting for news, Riley was tapping his foot on the floor.

Riley: Why the fuck would Gina try to commit suicide!

I knew Why I'm sure it was because of what Jack said to her in the morning, but I'm not the

one to say anything.

We sat there for hours waiting, then Janet's phone rang.

Janet: It's my mom excuse me.

Riley: Let me go and call Jamie.

I sat there praying for the first time in my life, i really wanted Gina to live, she's the closest person i have to a friend. Riley came back after a few minutes.

Riley: she's on her way..

One of the nurses came out.

Riley: How is she?

Nurse: You'll have to be patient the doctor is still busy

She went away.

Riley: It's been 5 hours what's taking them so long.

Me: They trying to save her Riley.

Janet came back to us.

The nurse came back with some white doctor, it was a private hospital one that looked expensive.

Riley: Nurse please we need an update

Nurse: Not now, as you can see i just got a Physician specialist.

That didn't sound good, why they need a specialist. They went in and we sat down again.

Janet: can i get anyone coffee?

Me: No thanks I'm fine.

Janet: Riley?

Riley: No thanks.

Jamie came in walking into our direction she looked very worried.

Jamie: Where is she?

Me: They still busy with her

Jamie: What happened?

Riley: We don't know, Anathi was the one who found her unconscious she overdosed on pills.

Jamie: she was trying to commit suicide?

Riley: looks that Way

Jamie: Why would Gina do that?

I looked at Janet, she looked at me with her finger on her lips signaling that "keep your mouth shut"

The specialist came to us after a while, looking all defeated.

Jamie: Is she okay doctor?

Doctor: We tried everything we could.

Me: No Doctor please don't tell us she didn't make it.

Doctor: She's still alive well not really alive

Jamie: Stop beating around the bush

Doctor: She overdosed on cocaine.

Riley: Cocaine?

We all looked puzzled

Riley: The has to be a mistake doctor my sister doesn't do Drugs.

We found a pill container next to her.

Doctor: She overdosed on cocaine and pills, those were slimming pills was she having weight problems?

Jamie: No! She had no problems with how she looked.

Gina wasn't really that fat she was Adele kinda fat.

Doctor: Was she suffering from depression?

Jamie: Not that we were aware off

Riley was getting ticked.

Riley: Just get the fuck straight to the point!!

Janet: Riley!

Riley: Sorry doctor I'm just worried about my sister.

Doctor: i understand, I'm afraid your sister is brain dead, we put her on life support she took a lot of cocaine.

Me: is she going to be okay though?

Doctor: I'm afraid not..

Janet: No she can beat this doctor, she can wake up.

Doctor: I'm not gonna give you false hope and say she will wake up today or tomorrow or even in 6 months time, there is no hope that she's even going to wake up.

Jamie went out, all heart broken she even kicked the bin that was on the passage.

Doctor: I'm really sorry i have to go and attend other patients,you can go see her if you want.

Riley: Yall can go I'll be in the car.

Me: You won't see her?

Riley: No.

I gave him the keys he went.

Me: See what your mom and Jack did?

Janet: we not sure it's them, don't accuse innocent people.

Me: Wtf? You were there at that table you saw how they broke her down

Janet didn't say anything. I left her there and went to Riley in the car.

Riley didn't even care to ask where Janet was he started the car and we went. We got in the house with Jack at the kitchen.

Jack: Where have you been? And where is Janet?

Riley: We were at the hospital

Jack: Why?

Riley: Gina tried committing suicide

Jack: Why would she do something so stupid

Riley: i don't know Jack!

Jack: How did she commit suicide?

Riley: she overdosed on cocaine and pills

Jack: I can't feel sorry for her, she was doing drugs!

Jack really is ruthless

Riley: That's the best you can say? Gina is lying in the hospital fighting for her life probably she won't even make it she's on life support!

Jack: Why you making it as if like I'm the one who put her there? Gina is stupid she always has been stupid, she has a perfectly good life i bought her a car i give her a 10 000 allowance a month who would be stupid enough to commit suicide with that kind of a life?

I saw Riley's hand forming a fist.

Gail entered.

Gail: What's going on here?

Riley was angry he walked away to his bedroom.

Jack: Stupid Gina tried killing herself

Gail: Why?

Jack: You asking me i have no idea..

Gail: so is she dead?

Jack: i don't know i don't pretty much care.

Gail: That girl has problems i tell you

Jack: i shouldve left her in Germany had i known she be this problematic

Gail: Useless like her mother, anyway were is Janet?

Jack: I don't know

Gail: Let me go and call her, i left my phone upstairs

She kissed Jack on the cheek and left.

Jack looked at me.

Jack: Bring me lemon tea in my room.

He went upstairs.

I wonder why he trusted me with his food all of a sudden.

I made him tea and took it to his room. His room looked scary, there was a bear statue, lion mat that had a lion head, it was wild animals all around some looked real

I put the tea down and made my way to the door.

Him: i have an offer for you, you could make serious cash.

What trick does he have up his sleeve now.

Jack: You have a good body for a Negro, not fat and not too slim i hate fat woman

What Is this guys trying to say to me.

He walked up to me and unbuttoned my shirt a

bit to reveal my cleavage

Him: You can visit me in my room a few nights and I'll pay you good money and you'll stop being a maid.

Me: What are you saying to me?

Him: be my sex slave and you will live like a queen.

Wow this guy doesn't seem to amaze me.

Him: I'll just chain you up like a dog with a leash on your neck and we can have fun after that i pay you good money

Me: I can't do that im not a loose woman

He looked at me and laughed

This man was gonna make me catch a case, i walked out i went to Riley's room the door was closed i didn't knock i just went to my room to sleep, it was 3am. I struggled to sleep as always till the sun came out and that's when i fell asleep..... I woke up at 10am bathe and

went to the house to get on with my chores.
There was no one i was alone. After cleaning i
sat to watch TV while i made myself some
snack, Riley and Jamie came in.

Me: Hey guys

Jamie: Hey

Me: can i make yall something to drink.

Jamie: coffee

Riley: water please.

I went to the kitchen and made them something
to drink, and took it to them.

Me: Did you guys go to the hospital?

Riley: No we were about to go there.

Me: Leme go and change I'm coming along

I went to change and went back to the house
while were about to leave Jack and Gail came in.

Jack: Where are you going?

No one answered, i think Riley was still mad.

Me: we going to the hospital.

Jack: that won't be necessary we from there.

Riley: You went there?

Jack: Yes and we pulled the plug.

He did what now!

Riley: Pull the plug?

Jack: doctors told me there's no hope she will never wake up, so i pulled the plug she's wasting the hospital's oxygen and electricity with all those machines running

Jamie: You killed her?

Jack: No i didn't she was already dead.

Gail: We should start preparing for the funeral..

I saw Riley Losing it he went to Jack and started punching Jack, Gail tried going to his rescue Riley pushed her she fell, it was just a mess i was scared Riley was gonna kill Jack..

we probably gonna have a double funeral

Save

Rate (33 Ratings)

[06/17, 17:29] Ron: PART 26 LOVE KNOWS NO COLOR

I was trying to get Riley off Jack and Jamie was holding me back.

Me: What are you doing Jamie can't you see his gonna kill him?

Jamie: let him kill this Busted! He killed my girlfriend.

Me: Riley stop his not worth it! You can't go to

jail for him!

Jack was already on the floor laying in a pool of blood.

Riley got off him and walked out, i told Jamie to let me go she did and i ran after Riley,he headed to his car and i got in too. I didn't know where we were going but i was along for the ride especially because he was angry i wanted to make sure he doesn't do anything stupid. His hand was full of blood and he was busy shaking it looked like he was in pain. We drove to the hospital and he stopped the car, we sat in the car for 30sec in awkward silence.

Riley: Sorry that you had to see me in that state.

Me: no need to Apologise id probably would've reacted the same way too if i was in your shoes.

Him: I didn't want you to see that side of me, i don't react violent to anger because i don't want you to see me as a monster and be scared of me.

Me: i can never see you like that, I'm not a saint too you know.

He gave me a faint smile, and we went out of the car and walked inside the hospital heading straight to Gina's ward, the bed was Empty Jack really did kill her.

Riley was getting emotional but he didn't want me to see him in that state.

Him: I'm going to the bathroom I'll be back.

Me: Okay

He walked to the bathroom and i went to sit in the waiting area. My heart was sore Gina was a very good person I'm gonna miss her bubbly personality. She didn't have to die like this and this was too soon she was just 21, and poor Jamie how was she gonna get through this.

Riley came back his eyes were red i could tell he had been crying. He signalled to me that we should go i stood up and we went to the car. We

drove off and instead of taking the road that leads home he took a different route.

Me: Ain't we going home?

Him: we are..

Me: but this road doesn't lead home

Him: it does lead home, just not the home you thinking off.

We drove till we got to The Penthouse.

Me: ohh you meant this home.

Him: Yes i meant this one, ain't you happy to be here?

Me: i am happy, I'm very happy

We got out of the car, and he held my hand

Him: Shall we?

I smiled then we went inside.

It was still as how we left it. His phone rang

Him: It's Brad i have to take this.

As he was answering his phone i walked upstairs and looked under the mattress my gun was still there, i took it out and put it in the wardrobe for sake keeping although i don't think I'll need it anymore. I went back downstairs to Riley.

Him: We going out

Me: going out where?

Him: Jennifer and Brad wanna make up for that time when they stood us up.

Me: Okay.

I went to wash my face just freshened up a bit. I was wearing a dress with chuck tailors (all-star)

Riley: won't you be cold?

Me: No.. I'll be fine because we'll be indoors.

We went to his Audii and drove off to a classy restaurant Eyy my dress code, at least Riley had a shirt on, formal pants with black shoes.

Me: Why didn't you tell me we coming to a classy restaurant look at how I'm dressed.

Him: You'll be fine.

A waitress approached us.

Her: Good afternoon would you like a table?

Riley: uhm we kinda meeting my friends they said they'll be here..

Riley looked around and saw Brad.

Riley: There he is Thank you very much.

Waitress: No problem sir.

She gave us menus and we went

Up to Brad and Jennifer. They were dressed to kill i felt a bit embarrassed. They greeted us with hugs then we all sat down.

Jennifer: It's good to see you guys again and sorry about the last time i really wanted to come but my husband here wanted to watch football.

Brad: Now you making me look bad

Jennifer: It's the truth.

Riley: It's fine even though we waited for you guys for hours.

Brad: That's why lunch is on us.

Riley: in that case we gonna order the whole restaurant.

We all laughed.

Jennifer: And Riley we've heard about Gina, our deepest condolences.

Riley: You guys heard already?

Brad: It's all over social media.

Jennifer: i saw it on the LGBT community page on Facebook.

Riley: i wonder who published the news soo fast, what did they say?

Jennifer: Nothing much just that she committed suicide, and her Step father Jack Muller pulled

the plug.

Me: They put it like that?

Jennifer: Yeap.

She took out her phone and showed me, Facebook was buzzing with Her story and they put her pictures too.

Me: That was fast.

Riley: let me see.

Riley took the phone and checked the news feed.

Brad: let's order guys

Jennifer: I'll just have the usual sprite with lime and a ceaser's salad.

Brad: On diet again?

Jennifer: No bokkie i just wanna eat healthy.

They were all loving and touching and kissing, white people weren't embarrassed about showing off their love in public.

Riley slammed the phone on the table.

Riley: Dammit!

Me: What's wrong?

Riley: It's Jamie who leaked the information, how could she handle my sister's death like that? Making it a public issue, look at the comments.

Some of the comments were horrible busy saying

"that's what happens when you become something you not"

Some of the comments were good.

We ordered and made it takeaways Riley wasn't in the mood to eat there anymore.

We hugged them Jennifer's goodbye and walked to our car.

Me: Maybe Jamie meant Good

Riley: i know but she shouldn't have went about

it that way.

We drove back to the Penthouse, Riley didn't stay he said he had errands to run, he kissed me goodbye and went.

I didn't have nothing much to do i took out the takeaway and ate, it was prawns and a salad, i saw the word prawns i thought maybe it was gonna be something good mara Nex. I couldn't process them i just put them in the fridge. Riley keeps some money in a cookie jar i took out R200, sent him a message that im going out to get real food and i went. I walked around looking for a good restaurant until i came across wimpy, i went in ordered a burger with chips, and a bar-one milkshake, i finished eating checked what time it was and it was 13:00 it was still early i called my long friend to meet up for drinks knowing Diamond she didn't say no. She SmSed me the details of where we should meet it was some bar and wasn't far from my location. I still had change left from my meal.

Diamond is always Early especially when alcohol is involved. We went in got some dumpies chilled and talked the whole day. At 18:00 i left and walked home, when i entered Riley was already there looking worried, and looked a bit drunk too.

Riley: Where have you been?

Me: i went out to eat then met up with a Friend and got some drinks.

Riley: What friend?

Me: Diamond don't you remember her?

Riley: and i should believe you right now because?

Me: i swear Riley I'm not lying to you.

Him: You've lied to me before!

Me: I've changed I've really changed.

Him: well it's hard to believe you right now, what kind of car did you get fucked in today? Was it a

Mercedes, was it a bmw?

Me: oh wow!

I walked upstairs all hurt. I know i did him wrong mara that was uncalled for. I went to the bathroom and poured water preparing to bath Riley came in and sat at the edge of the bath.

Him: I'm sorry Anathi..

I ignored him, he moved closer and held my hand that was on the tap.

Me: i know that I've lied to you and you probably never gonna forgive me but I'm really trying Riley.

Him: i know and I'm sorry, just that im still trying to deal with Gina's death.

I went closer to him and got between his legs he held me on my waist and buried his face on my waist, then raised it up again after a few minutes, he wasn't crying.

Him: I love you Anathi and right now you and

your sisters are the only family i have.

Does that mean he forgives me?

Me: i love you too.

He stood up and kissed me, he smelt whiskey, wasn't a bad scent was more of a turn on.

Me: let me close the water.

I closed the tap.

Him: i have an idea

Me: Yeah?

Him: why don't we do it in the bathtub?

Me: i think that will be dope.

He took off my clothes and i took off his too.

We got in the bathtub he was sitting and leaning at the end of the bathtub, there was no much space so i got on top of him i had to take charge. Was very good making love in the bathtub while i was riding him up and down he was running his hands on my body caressing

me and sucking my breasts hmmmm Lord have mercy i really enjoyed that moment, we both came at the same time busy moaning and he was pressing me down hard going deeper and deeper. We hugged very tight after coming and we was trying to catch our breath.

Me: I missed you

Him: i missed you too

He kissed me, and i pulled out.

Him: What's wrong?

Me: We didn't use a condom

Him: So?

Me: So i am fertile

Him: And?

Me: Riley quit playing.

Him: I don't know what you concerned about.

Me: Are we really ready for a baby?

Him: i am, i don't know about you but if you've really changed like you say you are then you should be ready too

The thought of being a mom though.

Me: i am ready.

He smiled and at me and kissed me. We got out of the bathtub and hit the shower i swear tonight we probably was gonna go the whole night until i put an end to it, i was very tired and soo was he. I didn't have no clothes but he did so i wore one of his t-shirts and we cuddled in bed.

Me: Snuggle bunny

Him: Yeah?

Me: Are we still going back to Jack's place?

Him: i don't know maybe

Me: I don't wanna go back there

Him: Why?

I should probably tell him the truth I mean there is a baby involved now and i really don't wanna lose him this time around. I told him everything about How Jack was treating me and how he wanted me to be his sex slave, i told him about his mom, about Janet's death, i told him everything. He got out of bed and started pacing around the room and said nothing. I didn't know if he believed me or not.

He stopped and looked at me, came to kiss me.

Him: I'm coming back

Me: Where you going?

He ignored me, and went to put on a black shirt, Jean, and black boots those kind of boots that drake wears and put on a black hoody. He took Down a picture from the wall and i saw a safe he opened the safe and took out a gun.

Haibo Riley has a gun?

Me: Riley is that a gun?

Him: You not the only one with a gun.

Okay who is this guy?

His gun was nothing like mine, it was loong.

Me: What gun is that?

Him: It's a sniper

He took out a lot of bullets too, took out a beanie hat and wore it with black leather gloves that didn't cover his whole fingers, they were half,he topped that with a lollipop.

Me: Riley what's going on?

He ignored me and took out some gadget and was on it for a while then put it back again and locked the safe and put back the picture.

I was getting scared.

Me: Riley what's going on?

Him: i don't know how to tell you this Anathi.

Me: just say it.

He sat down on the bed.

Him: I'm not who you think i am, i tried hiding my identity from you.

Me: Who are you?

Him: im not a Mineralogist haven't you asked yourself why i never go to work?

I shook my head no..

Him: I'm a very dangerous guy Anathi.

Me: What you mean by dangerous.

Him: I'm a Taker

Me: What do you mean you a Taker?

Him: i rob banks for a living..

I laughed a little.

Me: Okay hold up a bit,we moving fast here you possibly cannot be a Taker whatever you call it.

He stood up and went to the safe took out 5 passports.

Him: i can't stay in one place for a long time.
I felt like i was getting sick my stomach was
turning in.

Me: Riley this cannot be true.

Him: I'm sorry you had to find out about this...

Me: All this time Riley i thought i was lying to
you! and here you are also lying to me!

Him: I'm very sorry...

I was at the verge of crying

Me: who you working with?

He didn't reply

Me: Riley who you working with? It's your turn to
tell me the truth!

Him: i.. It's me, brad, Jennifer, Jamie, and Gina
was part of the team too..

Yoooh all this was shocking to me i was soo
confused.

Me: You heartless Riley you no different from Jack!

Him: I'm nothing like Jack

Me: Yes you are! Oh my God is your name even Riley? Is Jack even your God father whatever?

He didn't answer me.

Me: You evil Riley! You played me.

Him: Snuggle bunny my feelings for you are real..

Me: Don't lie to me!

Him: calm down..

Me: don't tell me to calm down!!

Him: Anathi i wouldn't tell anyone this but for the fact that I'm telling you means i truly love you, and you can't tell anyone about this, my crew cannot find out that you know about this!

Me: And if they do?

Him: then I'll be forced to kill you.

Me: Kill me? Riley what's gotten into you?

Him: And i will kill you Anathi because I've sworn to secrecy, it's the brotherhood covenant.

What happened to my sweet Riley who used to sing me sweet songs now his talking about killing me.

Me: Is that all?

He shook his head no

Me: What else?

Him: I'm also a..

Me: You?

Him: A serial killer, remember that little friend of yours the black guy?

Me: Sfiso?

Him: Yes that one..

Me: What about sfiso?

Him: i long took him out.

Me: Took him out?

Him: Killed him and buried him where no one will find him.

I was over shocked i walked backwards with my eyes wide open my hand over my mouth.

He stood up and came close to me

Me: Why Riley what did sfiso do to you?

Him: He had to die.

I was already in tears.

Me: Why?

Riley: Because he fucked you! He made shit personal when he fucked you!

I didn't know this guy who was standing right in front of Me i ran downstairs with him following me.

Him: Anathi wait!

I ran down the stairs and missed a step, i fell and rolled down those stairs, Riley came down

to me.

Him: Shit!

He came to me and tried to get me up. I wanted to fight him but my head my buzzing i was dizzy seeing the room 5times i bumped my head again. Lights out!

[06/17, 17:34] Ron: PART 27 LOVE KNOWS NO COLOR

I woke up at the hospital with a Pounding headache, the doctor was next to me.

Doctor: Welcome back

Me: I should move in here because this is like my second home now.

Doctor: You bumped your head again?

Me: I think so

Him: i ran some scans i wanna see how much damage you have caused to your head now.

Me: Can it be that serious?

Doctor: You've sustained a lot of trauma to your head and if you keep on going like this you might cause serious damage, you're lucky that there hasn't been any bleeding to your brain or else your family would be buying a coffin right now.

Me: Ya let's be thankful

Doctor: I wanna keep you here for a few days.

Me: I hate hospitals

Him: You have no choice.

My sisters came in with Jamie, I was happy to see them and so were they. The doctor went out.

They gave me big hugs.

Palesa: You always here

Me: I know sweetie that's because I mingle with the wrong people.

Jamie: What wrong people?

I didn't trust Jamie anymore especially after what Riley told me.

Me: Who gave you permission to come here with my sisters?

Jamie: They wanted to see you so i came with them,Riley told us you here

Me: I don't want you anywhere near my sisters ever again!

Jamie: Why?

Me: because i don't want you near them.

Palesa: hau Anathi..

Me: Shut up Palesa I'm not talking to you!

Palesa: Tjo waitse im not in the mood for your rudeness,mbali let's go.

Me: Where you going?

Palesa: outside.

She held Mbali's hand and they went. Palesa is becoming disrespectful.

Me: If i didn't have a Pounding headache i would sort her out.

Jamie: What's wrong with you? I mean I'm the one whose supposed to be in a bad mood I've just recently lost my girlfriend.

Me: and i have recently found out that you and Riley are thugs.

Jamie: Thugs?

Me: He told me everything Jamie, about you guys robbing banks and him being a serial killer!

Jamie: Shhh keep your voice down.

Me: why? Cause you scared someone would hear me.

Jamie: i don't know why Riley would tell you that you not supposed to know! If the crew could find out..

Me: I will be killed yes i know that.

Jamie: he told you his a serial killer?

Me: Ain't he?

Her: No his a hit man not a serial killer.

Me: And that's supposed to make a difference?

Her: Yes because serial killers are psychos and his not a psycho.

Me: Wow you truly are something else.

Jamie: so I've been told,look i would love to chill and talk but i have errands to run.

Me: killing people? You don't have to be ashamed anymore.

Her: i don't kill people i have never killed anyone before

Me: i don't believe you!

Her: i didn't expect you too.

This girl is arrogant, i never knew she was this arrogant.

Her: I don't know if the girls would wanna say bye to you.

Me: stay away from my sisters

Her: Okay can they walk home? It's 3 hours away.

OK she has a point.

Me: Just leave Jamie!

She walked out. I was Still trying to process what Riley told me i mean who would've thought that Riley could turn out to be like that.

The nurse came to check up on me then walked me to the shower, my head was still Pounding, i showerd then got in bed.

Me: Sister were you here when i was brought in?

Nurse: Yes i was here you came in last night.

Me: Did you see who brought me?

Her: No sorry

Me: Okay thanks.

Her: You welcome now you need to eat your lunch so you can drink your pills.

Lunch was brought for me i ate and drank pills.

Nurse: just ring me when you need anything else

Me: Thank you sister.

She smiled and left. This nurse was sweet you don't find sweet nurses like this. I liked this hospital was clean i have a tv with all the dstv channels, the food was not that horrible was quality, there was an air conditioner too. The pills made me drowsy i passed out... I woke up later at 20:00 with Riley starring at me, i freaked out a bit.

Him: I'm not gonna hurt you, I'll never hurt you..

Me: What do you want?

Him: I came to check up on you. I wanted to stay with you last night but i had a lil business to take care off so i dropped you off and left and sorry i wasn't here when you woke up.

Me: I'm happy that you were not here when i

woke up,i didn't wanna see your face

Him: Ouch! That hurts am i that ugly?

If only he knew how Fine he is.

Me: No..

Him: So if I'm not ugly i have to be good looking.

Me: You neither.

He laughed.

Him: There has to be one..

Me: You soo full of yourself

Him: i try not to be

Me: Riley what do you want here?

Him: like i said i came to check up on you.

Me: i am fine, I'm still Alive so now you can leave!

Him: Anathi i know you still angry..

Me: I'm not Angry, I'm way beyond being Angry i am Mad!

Him: I'm not proud of what I'm doing but this is the life i chose.

Me: And you dragging me along into your dangerous life.

He looked down.

Me: Is Jack even Jack? Riley there's so much confusion i don't even know what's what.

Riley: I guess there's still a lot that i need to tell you.

Me: You right i want you to tell me everything..

Him: Okay I'll tell you everything you wanna know, but on one condition

Me: What condition is that?

Riley: That after telling you everything you won't leave me

Me: I'm not sure about that

Him: Then sorry i can't tell you none.

Me: Fine i won't leave you!

Him: And i don't trust you right now.

Me: i give you my word

Him: your word is not true

Me: You can kill me if i leave

Him: that Could work

Me: You'd actually kill me?

Him: Yes, i don't have a heart Anathi.

Me: And you soo proud of that

Him: Very proud!

I seriously didn't know this stranger sitting beside me.

Me: So start talking..

Him: Not here we'll talk when you come back home..

Me: That will be long because the doctor said his keeping me here for a few days.

Him: he said that?

Me: Yes!

Him: Okay in that case let me go, you need your rest.

He tried kissing me and i turned my head to face the other direction.

He kissed me on my forehead and went.

I'm probably never gonna accept this lifestyle of his but i love him Shame and he has proven his Loyalty by sticking around even when I lied to him. I fell asleep after a while still thinking... I woke up in the morning bathe and waited for my breakfast.

Riley and the doctor came in.

Doctor: today Is your lucky day you going home.

Me: That's strange ain't it still soon didn't you say you wanna keep me here for a few days?

He looked at Riley then looked at me.

Doctor: Yes but there's no Internal damage so i

don't see a reason why you shouldn't go home.

Riley: And I'll hire a private nurse to take care of you at home.

This has Riley written over it. I didn't argue i changed to the clothes that he brought me they still had price tags on them. I dressed up signed my discharge papers, the doctor gave me meds then we walked to his car,he came with a different car it was a mustang GT. I wasn't gonna ask alot of questions I didn't feel like talking to him,we got in and he drove he also didn't say anything in the car just played music. We got home and my sisters were there, mbali came to hug me.

Me: What are you guys doing here?

Riley: i missed them alot so i decided to fetched them they gonna be here for a few days

Me: i wasn't talking to you, i was talking to my sisters

Him: i thought that question was directed to anyone since you didn't mention names.

Me: It was directed to my sisters, and i want you to stay away from them!

Riley: You think I'm gonna hurt them?

Me: You don't have a heart remember? So from now stay away from us please!

Him: You taking this situation way too seriously

Me: it is serious! You are a damaged soul and now you wanna damage us!

Palesa: Are you guys fighting

Me: No we not fighting

Riley: Anathi you better watch how you talk to me

Anathi: or what Riley? I ain't scared of you for shit! I am Anathi i ain't scared of anyone i have taken down alot of niggas before you and i can take you down too!

Riley took out a R200 note and gave it to Palesa.

Riley: Why don't you guys go buy ice creams down the road i wanna talk to Anathi.

Palesa: Can i buy airtime too?

Riley: You can get anything you want.

They walked out.

I didn't wanna talk to Riley i looked at him clicked my tongue and started walking upstairs he grabbed me by my arm. He wasn't smiling or laughing with me anymore he looked serious and his voice was Firm.

Him: I'm starting to get ticked off by your attitude!

I was getting a bit scared he looked very angry but I'm not gonna show him.

Me: Oh so what? You gonna hit me?

Him: I'll never hit you.

Me: Then let go of me! .

I took his hand off Me and walked away again he grabbed me by my waist and threw me on the couch,my head started throbbing, i never pictured him to be this strong.

Me: so much for saying you won't hit me!

Him: i didn't hit you!

I kept quiet.

Him: Fuck Anathi! You always push me to the edge!

I didn't say anything, in the mood he was in, it was safe not to say anything.

Him: You wanna know about my life? Fine I'll tell you. I got into this life when i was 16 years of age! I started off slow by doing pickpocketing stealing in supermarkets. When i was 18 i was trained professionally by someone whose dead now,and no Jack doesn't know about my life neither does Gail. When i was 22 i recruited my own crew Jennifer and Brad how we met and

where we met is a story for another day. We not armature thugs that's why we don't do petty crimes like hijacking, mugging, and all that shit! We professional takers we rob banks and on the other hand I'm a serial killer!

I wanted to say Jamie told me about you being a hit man and not a serial killer but it's better i keep quiet..

Him: So drop the fucken attitude you not Palesa's age for fuck'sake!, your sulking and giving me attitude won't change who i am.

Okay this new Riley i don't like him at all

Him: tell anyone about this I'm gonna kill you! Go to the cops I'll kill you! Run away I'll kill you! I don't have a heart Anathi and never forget that!

Maybe this is the other side of him that he didn't want me to see.

Him: Anything else?

I shook my head no.

Him: Good!

He walked to the door and went out.

Okay what just happened?

I went upstairs and saw a lot of new clothes and shoes on the bed. They were all new the cheapest cost R1500 and that was just a top, they were my size how did Riley know my size. I went downstairs to drink my pain killers for my throbbing headache. My sisters came back with ice creams they gave me one but I wasn't in the mood.

Me: No thanks.

Palesa: ice cream is good when you grumpy
I laughed a little and took it..

Palesa: Are you and Riley having problems?

Me: No

Mbali: can I go play with my tab, it's upstairs in my bag.

Me: Yes you can just don't play with it too much.

Mbali: Okay.

Palesa: I'm not a child Anathi

Me: i know

Palesa: Then don't treat me like one

Me: We having some problems

Her: What kind of problems?

Me: unfortunately i can't tell you i still wanna live

Her: It's that bad?

Me: You have no idea

Palesa: Okay whatever it is i hope you guys fix it

Me: i hope soo too.

Palesa: Oh before i forget i started a new school last week

Me: Really?

Her: Yeap, Riley got us transfers

Me: He didn't tell me, and how are you finding it?

Her: best private school ever but it's white people, excluding me I've only seen 5 black people.

Me: and racism?

Her: It's not bad, it's a primary school and a secondary school at least mbali has made a few friends unlike me

Me: give it time sweetie.

Palesa: Guess how much the school fees is?

Me: How much?

Her: primary 7000 a month and secondary 25 000 every year.

Me: That is a lot of money!

Palesa: but it's worth it though.

Me: i can't believe Riley is paying that much.

Palesa: well remember you always said you want a rich man to take care of you and us so

there you have one.

Me: I remember, that has taught me to be careful for What you wish for cause you really might get it.

My phone started ringing on the table, i went to answer it was a number i didn't know.

Me: Hello

A woman spoke her voice sounded shaky like she been crying and still is crying.

Her: Hello who is this?

Me: What do you mean whose this, you called me first.

Her: I'm looking for my son his name is Sfiso we got your number from his phone records.

She started crying.

Her: If you know where he is please tell me his been missing now for almost a week, i can't eat, i can't sleep, my high blood is abnormal If you

know anything please tell me, i need to know where my son is..

My heart sank to my knees,Riley wasn't lying when he said he killed him

Save

Rate (26 Ratings)

[06/17, 17:35] Ron: PART 28 LOVE KNOWS NO COLOR

I didn't know what to say to this poor woman, i couldn't tell her the truth.

Me: Sorry Ma i don't know where sfiso is.

Her: Awu Nkosi yami umntanami Kodwa! (ohh

God my child)

Me: Sorry mama,i have to go.

I hung up the phone. It was heart breaking I'm sure it's every parent's worst nightmare to hear that their child is missing or dead, i could only imagine what she's going through. Palesa came to me.

Palesa: You okay sis?

I was in tears.

Me: Yes I'm fine.

Her: who was that?

Me: It's.. It's no one.. I mean.. Excuse me.

I ran upstairs, set on my bed and cried, Sma is gone, now sfiso is gone too and what's worse is that both their deaths are connected to me,made me wonder why I'm still Alive. As i cried my headache became worse, eish this bloody headaches irritate me! I stood up poured water in the basin and washed my face then

went back downstairs.

Palesa: Anathi

Me: Yes?

Her: Why didn't you tell me that Gina is dead? I had to find out from Facebook.

I didn't notice mbali who was standing behind me.

Mbali: Aunty Gina is dead!

Me: Yes babies i thought someone told you.

Palesa: Omg! What happened?

Mbali was imitating Palesa

Mbali: Omg! What happened?

Me: Uhm she... She committed suicide

Mbali: What is suisize?

Palesa: It's suicide! It's when someone kills themselves.

Me: Palesa!

Palesa: What? It's the truth.

Me: don't say such things in front of mbali.

Palesa: When is the funeral? I wanna go

Me: i doubt Jack will allow us to attend the funeral.

Palesa: he cannot do that! It's wrong

Me: It's his child.

Palesa: i wish someone could stand up to him!

Me: You and i both, why don't we go out for lunch?

Mbali: Yepppppii we can go to Mamdonalds.

Palesa: You are soo slow sometimes it's shameful to call you my sister.

Mbali: I'm not slow, you are slow.

Palesa: Mamdonalds *Laughing*

Mbali: You ugly

Palesa: Not like you.. You look like a..

Me: Palesa maan stop!

Palesa: She started it!

Me: And I'm ending it!

Palesa: Whatever

Me: What's that?

Her: Nex (nothing)

Me: Uzoswaba yazi ende uzoswaba kab'hlungu
(You'll be sorry in a very painful way)

She kept quiet.

Me: we gonna leave you!

Her: Ha! What for?

Me: ngoba uyaphapha (because you forward)

Palesa: Mbali is the one who starts shit with me
and then i get punished for it, it's not fair!

Me: Life is unfair

She sat on the couch all sulking and wiping
tears from her eyes. Riley walked in.

Palesa: i wanna go back to Jamie's house at least her mom is better than you!

Me: Then Hamba Palesa! (then leave)

Riley: What's going on?

Palesa was already in tears.

Palesa: Everytime when i fight with Mbali Anathi takes her side!

Me: Mbali is a baby wena you old you should know better!

Palesa: I'm also a child im 15

Me: but you older than her!

Palesa: You the worse guardian ever I'm sure mom was gonna be better than you!

Yoooh i lost it and went to her, she stood up and ran to hide behind Riley.

Me: That's how you thank me Palesa, after all i did for you? Where was mom when i had to sacrifice my childhood and my teenage years to

make sure that you have everything you want
huh? Where was mom then?

I was soo hurt by what she said, tears were at
the verge of falling.

Riley: Calm down Anathi..

Me: Don't tell me to calm down Riley! You don't
know what i did for this thing and this is how
she says thank you!

I was soo mad i walked to the bedroom and
cried,how can my own sister say such things to
me after everything i did for her?,Riley walked in
while i was going up and down with tears in my
eyes all crying.

He came and hugged me.

Me: Riley how can she say such things to me?
You don't know how much I've sacrificed for her!

Him: I'm sure she didn't mean all those things,
you know how people get when they angry they
say things that they don't mean.

Me: She hurt me, you don't know how many times i sacrificed my life for her.

Him: I'm sorry snuggle bunny, that's why i wanna take care of you and them give you the best life money can ever buy to make up for all the times that you had to hustle hard for you and them.

He wiped my tears and gave me a baby kiss.

Him: i love you

Me: i love you too

Him: And I'm sorry that i wasn't honest with you but i didn't know how to tell you about my life and I was afraid that it would be too much for you to handle and you'd walk out on me

Me: I'm not gonna walk out on you

Him: You promise?

Me: i promise

He kissed me, and hugged me tight.

Him: can you make peace with Palesa? I mean you guys are putting me in a difficult situation especially because both of you matter the most to me, i don't wanna take sides

Me: Okay.

He held my hand and we went downstairs, Palesa was on her phone with headsets on, mbali was sitting on the floor with her tab playing games.

Riley signalled to her that she should take off her headsets and she did.

Riley looked at me.

Me: uhm i just wanna say that.. Well I've just realized that you have feelings and somehow I've managed to hurt..

Riley: Anathi..

Me: Fine. I am sorry for what I've said and you right i should stop taking Mbali's side and consider your feelings too.

Palesa: Thank you.

Riley: don't you have anything to say to Anathi?

Palesa: Nope

Riley: Palesa..

Palesa: I'm also sorry for those things I've said, i didn't mean to bring up mom because the honest truth is that you've always been like a mom to us and we've never been in need of anything because you were always there to provide everything for us.

That was sweet.

Me: Thank you.

Riley: Ain't you guys gonna hug it out?

She stood up and came to hug me.

Me: I love you

Her: i love you too, can we go to McDonalds now?

Me: Yes sure.

Riley: I'll even pay, lemme go get some cash upstairs.

He went upstairs and came back after 5min, he handed me a stack of R100 rand notes.

Me: That looks like a lot of money

Him: It's not that much

Me: How much is it?

Him: i think R5000

Palesa: You say what now?

Me: we not planning on buying the whole McDonalds

Him: Then i don't know you guys will buy other things you want.

Me: uhm okay.

Him: ohw here are the keys to my polo you guys can have it i have no use for it anymore

Me: i don't know how to drive

Palesa: i know

Riley: then it's yours.

Me: You know how to drive?

Her: Yes Jamie taught me.

Me: You don't have a license i don't wanna get arrested

Palesa: live a little Anathi you 19

Me: You are a minor

Riley: no one is getting arrested i won't allow it.

Me: and how you gonna make sure?

Riley: Because i have contacts in high places.

Palesa: see Anathi you worry alot, can we go now?

Me: fine.

We walked out to the parking.

Me: Palesa you sure you know how to drive?

Her: Yes relax Anathi.

We went in, i sat at the front mbali sat at the back.

Me: yooh if we die..

Palesa: i know how to drive ask Mbali

Mbali: she knows.

She started the car and reversed almost bumping to another car.

Me: Wtf was that? i thought you said you know how to drive!

Her: obviously I'm not that perfect.

I was praying all the way to McDonalds and luckily we arrived there safely.

Me: your driving is horrible

Her: but did you die?

Me: No but i almost had a attack

We went in ordered some burgers and ate. After McDonalds we went and did some shopping nyana since it was boring in the house. We also

went to the mall and watched a movie. At around 19:00 we drove back home and again i was glad we didn't die,we got into the elevator and made our way to the Penthouse. When we got to The Penthouse there was smoke i almost thought something was burning, only to find Riley and Jamie smoking cigars, drinking Hennessey, and playing hip hop music videos and the volume was very loud and I'm sure the whole building could hear and they counting alot of money, i swear i ain't seen soo much money before. They didn't even hear us coming in busy singing "Yeah I'm in this bitch with the terror got a handful of stacks better grab an umbrella i make it rain" i went up to him and when he saw me he lowered the volume.

Me: Eminem wannabe! That was too loud I'm sure the whole building heard you!

Palesa: Wow that Is alot of money!

Me: Palesa take mbali and go upstairs..

Jamie: Hi Anny..

Me: Hi my left foot!

Palesa: Are those cigars?

Me: Palesa i said go upstairs!

She didn't fight me this time she took Mbali and went upstairs.

Me: Are you guys crazy all this money here, Cigars, and alcohol?

Riley: Yeah we crazy

Me: Where did you even get this money from?

Jamie: i think you know.

Me: i can't have none of this in my house there's kids here yall better find another place to do your shady dealings!

Riley looked at Jamie.

Jamie: i think you better sing her the hustler's Anthem.

Riley: i was thinking the same thing too.

Me: hustler's what?

Jamie: hustler's Anthem!

Riley: "Baby you gotta know that

I'm just out here doing what I gotta do for me
and you

And we eating... So bitch why the fuck is you
trippin'.. I'm taking these chances

My head to the sky

My feet on the ground

My fingers to the judge if the money don't
move.. Then i won't budge"

Me: Mxm

I walked upstairs with them laughing at me. I
didn't do much i just bathe put on my Pjs and
chilled in bed watching TV. Riley came in after a
few hours.

Me: Are yall done?

Him: Yeap

He came and sat beside me.

Me: You and your people.

Him: we trying to console ourselves we still dealing with Gina's death.

Me: when is the funeral?

Him: in 2days time..

Me: I'm sorry i know how close yall were..

Him: Leme go and bath.

He kissed me on my forehead and went, Riley was not good with showing emotions. I got out of bed and went to the kitchen to eat ice cream Palesa came down all smiling and looking at her phone.

Me: And who got you all smiling?

Her: No one

Me: Can't be no one with that smile

Her: Okay promise you won't be mad?

Me: Why would i be mad?

Her: Because i know how you don't want me to have a bf

Hai I'm making peace with that situation she's 15 turning 16 soon i can't control her.

Me: so you have a bf?

Her: Yes...

Me: You like him?

Her: Alot

Me: Okay

Her: You not mad?

Me: No I'm not just be careful don't do things that will put you in a difficult situation like having sex and falling pregnant.

She laughed.

Her: no i won't

Me: at least

Her: he wants to take me out on a date..

Riley walked in on us.

Riley: Whose taking you out on a date..

Palesa: no one

Me: her bf

Riley: What bf?

Me: Palesa has a bf

Riley looked at her

Riley: You have a bf?

She nodded yes in embarrassment.

Riley: And he wanna take you out?

She nodded yes

Riley: when?

Palesa: Saturday night

Riley: Okay good thing i have a shotgun

Palesa: You gonna shoot my bf?

Riley: no one is taking my baby girl out without my approval i wanna see him first..

Palesa: What?

Riley: Im serious or there's no date.

Palesa: Anathi!

Me: What? You found Riley better than me and now his gonna shoot your bf

Palesa: his not gonna shoot him

Me: ohh yes he will

Riley: i don't bluff!

Palesa: i might as well just hang myself because you guys are making my life difficult..

She walked upstairs all angry, i laughed.

Me: i thought you were bathing..

Him: i was about too until i remembered that i forgot my phone here..

Me: You not gonna shoot her bf are you?

Riley: If he fucks up i will..

He got his phone and carried me upstairs.

Me: I'm not heavy?

Him: Naaa you light as a feather..

The day we didn't look forward too came, it was Saturday morning we were preparing to go to Gina's funeral i was wearing a black dress with black heels and a black hat and shades Riley and Jamie were wearing black suits, we left the Penthouse to the church where the service was gonna be held.

Me: Are you guys sure Jack won't freak me out when he sees me?

Jamie: Agh forget about that man..

Riley: Have no fear he won't touch you!

We got lost at first until we found the church, there wasn't a lot of cars and we saw The LGBT

community standing outside apparently Jack didn't want them anywhere near the funeral. We got out of a black Mercedes-Benz C200 and Walked to the door. There were 2 men standing by the door and they stopped us.

Man: Sorry Sir you not allowed to go in

Riley: This is my sister's funeral..

Man: i know but you can't go in.

Riley: do you know who i am?

Man: Yes Sir Muller told us not to let you in

Me: He can't do that, it's his sister's funeral.

Man: Sorry mam but I'm following orders.

Riley was getting pissed he tried to push through the guards and go inside but they just threw him on the ground.

Man: Sir Please! Don't make us use violence leave in peace!

I went and i helped him get up.

Jamie: This is shit!

Riley: I'm not gonna let Jack win, this time his gone too far, Jamie you know what to do.

Jamie: Yes boss!

Riley gave Jamie the car keys Jamie went to the car and drove off.

Me: What are you going to do?

Him: we gonna enter the church in style..

Me: Riley don't do anything distractive respect your sister's legacy

Him: That's exactly what I'm doing!

Riley went and he was busy arguing with the guards until they actually pushed him out of the church yard, we were all standing at the street with him busy kicking the gate and the fence.

Riley: What's taking Jamie soo long?

I didn't ask what's happening because he was very angry.

He loosened his tie then ended up taking it off. After an hour i saw a big truck coming from down the street and it stopped close to us, it was Jamie.

Riley: What took you soo long?

Jamie: Sorry i had troubles driving it, this thing is huge.

Riley: Snuggle bunny i want you to stand very far

Me: No I'm getting in the truck with you.

Riley: i don't wanna argue with you Anathi

Me: Then don't!

He didn't take the argument further, we all got in the truck.

Riley: Anathi make sure you got the seat belt on.

Me: done!

Riley drove the truck in through the gate i saw the LGBT community stepping back and

screaming, the guards saw what was about to happen but they couldn't stop the truck because it was too big. Riley drove the truck straight through the church shattering the side wall, people inside were screaming and some were trying to get away and shame some must have had the truck run over them, when Riley applied the breaks we all leaned forward and i hit the dashboard hard with my forehead before the truck came to a stop, we were just very close to hitting the coffin, my head started aching, the way i bump my head though, this time around i probably caused serious damage because i was Bleeding through my nose and i got a sharp pain in my head I held on to Jamie's hand tight because my vision was blurring..

Jamie: Anny are you Okay? Riley i think Anny is hurt..

Riley: Snuggle bunny are you okay?

All i could do was scream and say "Riley i can't

see”

[06/17, 17:39] Ron: PART 29 LOVE KNOWS NO COLOR

My vision was very blurry i couldn't see anything just shadows.

Riley: What do you mean you can't see?

Me: i don't know why but i can't see.

Riley: Jamie take her to Dr G. While i handle this situation.

I heard the truck doors open.

Riley: Hold my hand I'll get you down.

I held his hand and shifted closer to the door, he must've went out because i heard him from the floor saying come ill hold you. I tried to locate the truck's step with my leg with him telling were it is, then he held me on my waist and got me down.

I heard Jack's voice and Gail think they were coming close to us.

Jack: And this is how you respect your sister?

Riley: You prevented me from coming to my sister's funeral what was i supposed to do?

Jack: I prevented you because i don't know you anymore, you no longer my son. Gail told me about your relationship with this Negro you and your sister have shamed the family so bad I'm glad she's dead, and now I'm hoping you die!

I was holding on to Riley's arm and i felt him moving.

Riley: we the ones who should be ashamed of you. You took us away from our mother and now you keeping her from us! Yes i know that she's out of the Asylum and you want her dead!

Eyy Riley why did he have to say that.

Jack: This Negro told you!

I felt Riley moving closer to me.

Riley: If you touch her I'm gonna kill you!

Jack was laughing with his evil laugh.

Gail: Riley what's happening to you.

Riley: Shut the fuck up Gail! You really think I'm gonna marry your daughter? I don't love her and I'm never gonna wake up tomorrow loving her, No one will marry your daughter she's gonna grow old and die alone!

Ehh I never thought Riley could be this Livid.

Riley: And you Jack! You drive my sister suicidal and then you think I'll never find out.

I don't know what happened but i heard someone falling and people sending out a cry.

Riley: i told you that don't touch my baby!

Gail: Riley what's wrong with you? After all that Jack has done for you and you treat him like this!

Riley: he should be thankful that im not putting

a bullet in his head!

Jamie: boss we have a problem.

Riley: Shit!

I heard a voice talking it was a male voice.

Man: All 3 of you are under arrest for property damage and attempted murder of 10 people and injuring 5 people, and endangering the lives of others.

Me: great we going to jail!

Riley: Officer i am the only one responsible for this the other two have nothing to do with this.

Man: They were your accomplices.

Riley: No i forcefully got them into the truck on gunpoint.

Man: is it true?

Jamie: Yes it is true.

Man: Okay then we'll take you down to the police station

Jack: Officer he threw me to the ground he is a very dangerous man he doesn't belong to be in a society with other people his a threat to others Please lock him up and throw away the key.

I can't believe Jack right now.

Riley: Jamie take Anathi to Dr G and I'll meet you in the house, and you Jack I'm not done with you!

Jack: no you done! I'll make sure you get locked for a long time

Riley laughed a little

Riley: then you don't know me

Officer: Sir there's no need for threats or they will add up to your case, let's go

Riley: get your Filthy hands off me I'm capable of walking to the car by myself

Jamie: Let's go Anny.

She held my hand and we walked out.

Me: His going to jail Jamie what's gonna become of me and my sister's.

Jamie: That won't happen he's not going to jail

Me: How do you know?

Jamie: because he's done a lot of shit and he always comes out with a slap on the wrist

Me: He won't be lucky this time around i mean Jack is involved now he gonna make sure he goes down.

Jamie: We run the police department Anny we have a strong alliance there and his a superintendent he always make sure that our cases disappear into thin air.

Ya neh they what do they not own

Me: next thing you gonna say you own the military?

She laughed.

Her: those ones are difficult.

After walking for 30 min we stopped.

Me: Why we stopping?

Her: We waiting for someone to bring us a car.

We waited then the car came, Jamie helped me get in then she drove to the doctor. When we arrived she helped me out again and we went in, then she sat me down.

Me: we at the hospital?

Jamie: No its a surgery of some doctor her name is Dr G she is the best optometrist.

We sat there for a while.

Me: We've been sitting here for a while now.

Jamie: She's coming at 12pm it's 11am now.

Me: Yoh we still gonna wait.

Her: Just an hour, do you want something to eat?

Me: No thanks

Her: You still have blood on your face must have been when you bled through your nose..

Me: that's not good.

Jamie: You can't see nothing at all

?

Me: my vision is blurry i see white and shadows

Jamie: i hope it's not serious.

Me: Me too

Dr G finally came because i heard a woman voice talking to us.

Jamie: Dr G always a pleasure to see you

Dr G: What are you guys up too now?

Jamie: The usual you know

Dr G: I've heard about Gina I'm sorry

Jamie: Ya it's been bad

Dr G: How is Riley taking it?

Jamie: Pretty bad but his gonna be okay.

Dr G: I'll keep you guys in my prayers

Jamie: Thank you Doc we need all the help especially from above.

Dr G: You guys should come to church

Jamie: uhm you know Doc i don't think God like us that much.

Haibo this people are talking about their business now Phela.

I cleared my throat.

Jamie: Oh ya sorry, doc this is Riley's flower her name is Anny

Dr G: hi Anny

Me: Hi..

Jamie: uhm she can't see your hand that's why she can't give you a handshake

Dr G: ohw sorry i was surprised why she's not giving me a handshake, what happened?

Me: i Hit my forehead on a dashboard

Dr G: is it your first time bumping your head?

Me: No

Dr G: Please come to my office.

Jamie helped me and we went to her office

Me: can i please wash my face first?

Dr G: Ofcourse Jamie help her to the basin.

Jamie helped me to the basin and i washed my face then she got a paper towel and wiped me. She helped me to go sit on the bed, i heard by Dr G's voice that she's close to me. She lifted my chin up and blew air on my face.

Dr G: Can you feel the air going into your eyes?

Me: No

Her: Ofcourse not because you would've blinked.

Dr G: I'm now shinning a light in your eyes can you see it?

Me: Yes but it's too faint

Her: That's good, that's very good.

But your iris don't construct to the light..

Dr G: What can you see?

Me: White and shadows my vision Is blurry

Her: as if like you been wearing glasses for too long and now you have to live without them?

Me: Yes something like that.

Dr G: I'm gonna slightly prick your eyelids with a pin tell me if you feel pain

Me: Okay

Dr G: Can you feel pain?

Me: No

I heard her let out a deep sigh

Dr G: this is just what i thought

it is

Me: What's wrong doctor? Am i blind..

Dr G: for now yes.

Jamie: What does that mean?

Dr G: You have either injured your ophthalmic nerve or you have paralysed it but in your case i think you have paralysed it meaning it's temporarily dead.

Jamie: I'm not following

Dr G: the ophthalmic nerve is the fifth cranial nerve and it's the division of the trigeminal nerve. The ophthalmic nerve is a sensory nerve and it controls most of the eye structures like the iris and the cornea. You cannot blink, you cannot feel pain because the ophthalmic nerve is paralysed or injured, if it's paralysed you will regain your eyesight perhaps in weeks time the longest can be 6 months, but if you have injured it then you might regain your eye sight in a few years time or never.

Me: Yooh doctor can't you find out If it's injured or paralysed?

Dr G: that will need an operation, but for now

let's give it some time and see the outcome, i will give you eye drops you'll have to use the eye drops 3 times a day because since you can't really blink your eyes become dry so eye drops will keep them moist.

Me: Thank you Doctor.

She gave me a walking stick and eye drops.

Jamie and i went out to the car. The thought of me going blind eish!

Jamie: You'll be okay Anny

Me: What if I'm permanently blind?

Jamie: don't think like that be positive.

We drove to The Penthouse and went in.

Jamie: Good to see you out.

Riley: You know i was never gonna go to jail.

Me: Riley you here?

Him: Yea snuggle bunny I'm here.

Yoooh that was a relief i wanted to go and hug him but there were a few obstacles in my Way,so he came and hugged me

Me: I was scared that you'll never come back

Him: That will never happen.

Me: i wish that I could say I'm happy to see you

Him: What did Dr G say?

Me: That i might be permanently blind

Jamie: that's not true, she said you might have paralysed or injured the nerve. We have to give it some time to see if it's temporary or permanent but she said in your case it can be temporary.

Riley: That's good news.

I heard my sisters talking coming from upstairs.

Palesa: You guys are back?

Riley: Yes we are, can you guys sit down there's something we wanna discuss with you.

Palesa: What did we do now?

Riley held my hand..

Riley: Anathi is blind, temporarily blind so i need all of us to be a team and help her that's why you guys are moving back here permanently Jamie we'll go and fetch your clothes.

Palesa: Anathi is what?

Riley: Temporarily blind,can't get into detail but we had a bit of a minor accident.

Palesa: That's bad

Mbali: that's bad

Riley: i know so can i count on you guys?

Palesa: Ofcause you can

Riley: Then that's good.

Me: Can i go braid my hair since it will be hard to maintain it

Riley: Yes you can Jamie will drive you

Me: why can't you drive me?

Him: because there's something i have to take care off.

Palesa: When will you back? Because im going to a date later on.

Jamie: a date?

Riley: some fool is taking her out on a date i have to meet him first

Jamie: at what time is the date?

Palesa: 18:00

Riley: 4 hours left I'll be back before then.

He kissed me goodbye and went. Jamie walked me to the car and we went to a salon, i didn't wanna do something that's complicated i just did a carrot straight back.

Jamie: You look pretty

I smiled.

Me: Thank you.

He walked me out of the salon and to the car, before we went home she drove to steers and we got something to eat then went home, Riley was home.

Riley: Wow you look beautiful?

Me: Thank you, and thank you Jamie for driving me.

Jamie: No problem.

Me: Walk me upstairs.

Riley held my hand and walked me upstairs to our bedroom, we got there and he kissed me.

Me: can you believe i won't be able to fully close my eyes?

Him: They look closed to me

Me: i think they half closed.

Him: So how you gonna be able to sleep at night?

Me: i don't know

Him: think you should use the blind fold thing.

Me: Ya probably.

Him: don't worry snuggle bunny you will regain your eye sight i will make sure you do.

Me: What if i don't?

Him: You will I'll even get you a specialist from America if i have too

I smiled..

Me: What did i do to deserve you?

Him: the question should be what did i do to deserve you?

He hugged me tight.

Him: i love you

Me: i love you too

All of a sudden i felt like vomiting, i put my hand over my mouth

Riley: Are you okay?

Me: i feel like vomiting

He walked me to the bathroom, i didn't vomit i was ranching, i fell nauseated.

Me: must've been what i ate

Riley: What did you eat?

Me: Ribs and chips

Riley: i doubt.. I think that..

Me: think what?

Him: That you pregnant

Ohhh hell no i can't be pregnant.

Me: i don't think so.. No i can't be pregnant

Him: well you are pregnant remember the first time you had the same symptoms and you were pregnant

Me: No i really can't be pregnant

Riley: well you are, i don't shoot blanks.

What if his right, what if I'm pregnant.

Him: we'll get you a pregnancy test tomorrow

Me: You really think I'm pregnant?

Him: Yeap i can feel it

Ehh this can't be happening.

Him: Let's go meet this fool who wanna take my baby on a date

Me: Don't threaten him

Him: i don't do threats.

We walked downstairs and waited, Palesa came downstairs.

Palesa: Okay guys it's 18:00 please don't embarrass me.

Jamie: We just wanna see him that's all

Palesa: Okay He be here soon.

We waited and waited.

Riley: It's 19:00 were is he?

Palesa: i don't know

Me: He be here guys maybe his running late.

Palesa: he just WhatsApped me his here.

Riley: Tell him to come up

Palesa: Okay guys Please I'm begging you..

Riley: Palesa tell him to come up..

Palesa: I'll go fetch him

Jamie: like hell you will! I'll go fetch him what is he wearing?

Palesa: let me ask him.

Riley: Yall can go and fetch him together

I heard footsteps making their way to the door.

Me: This means a lot to Palesa don't ruin it for her she likes this boy..

Riley: we'll see about that.

I heard the door opening after a few minutes,
Riley helped me stand up.

Jamie: This is the fool boss

Palesa: This is Kagiso and Kagiso meet my family, this is my sister Anathi, that's my Aunt Jamie you already met her, and this is my Uncle R..

Riley: Point of correction I'm her father!

Kagiso: nice meeting all of you..

Me: You sound like a sweet boy, how old are you?

Kagiso: I'm 18

Riley: You old! Do you know how old my daughter is?

Kagiso: Yes sir she's 15.

Riley: Couldn't you find a girl your age?

Me: Riley..

Kagiso didn't answer

Palesa: Can we go now?

Riley: i want you home at 8pm

Palesa: 8pm that's too early!

Riley: then there's no date

Me: i think 22:00 is Perfect

Riley: I am the man of this house and i say 8pm!

Kagiso: I'll have her home by 8pm sir

Riley: If she's not home by 8pm I'm out there looking for you!

Kagiso: she will be home by 8.

Riley: i have a beautiful daughter and i pride myself in that, do you also know what i have?

Kagiso: no sir

Riley: i have a shotgun, a sniper, and if you fuck up I'll have a murder case and unfortunately for you, you won't get justice because I also have an Alibi!

Jamie: And his not joking..

Riley: Whose the last guy i killed again dawg?

Jamie: Oh that fool the one you ripped his heart out and ate it..

Kagiso: You joking right?

Riley: do i look like a comedian?

Kagiso: no sir.

Riley: Palesa here's some cash to pay for the food and tonight you can drive my Audi R8

Kagiso: That will be unnecessary sir i have a car and I'll pay for dinner

Jamie: Who asked you?

Riley: listen here you punk! My daughter drives her own car and pays for her own food! There's no punk out there whose gonna provide for her, she's rich she can provide for herself!

Palesa: Uncle Riley let him go! Anathi do something.

Me: What can i do i can't see anything!

I heard someone falling on the chairs.

Me: What's going on?

Palesa: Uncle Riley is trying to kill my bf!

Me: Jamie do something!

Jamie: I'm enjoying this, i might as well sit back and watch.

Riley: stand up and fight me! You soo weak how you gonna protect my daughter if someone attacks her or forcefully grabs her?

I heard this Kagiso guy crying,Palesa was also crying and busy pushing me to stop Riley.

If i am pregnant i just pray it's not a girl, because Riley is gonna make one hell of a father!

Rate (35 Ratings)

[06/17, 17:41] Ron: PART 30 LOVE KNOWS NO COLOR

I wish i could see what's happening right now so I could help.

Palesa: I'm never gonna forgive uncle for this.

Me: I'm sorry sweety I'll talk to him.

I heard Kagiso talking through those tears.

Kagiso: I'm sorry sir

Riley: Sorry for what?

Me: Riley leave him alone!

Riley: Fine yall can go! Just know there won't be touching, kissing, or sex! If i found out that you've touched her i will cut off your balls and feed them to my dogs do we understand each other?

Kagiso: Yes sir!

Jamie: I'll walk them to the car.

Me: Bye sweetie enjoy

Palesa: i doubt i will enjoy Uncle Riley has already ruined our date!

Riley: You'll thank me later.

They left and the house was quiet.

Me: Was that necessary?

Riley: It was i don't want this boys getting comfortable with her.

Me: i pray that we don't have a daughter you gonna make one hell of a father!

He laughed.

Him: Leme make popcorns so we can watch a movie

Me: Are you dissing me?

Him: No we gonna watch a movie, good way to test your eye sight.

Me: Okay.

He helped me sit on the couch.

Me: Snuggle bunny

Him: Yes?

Me: Did you really kill sfiso?

Him: Why do you ask?

Me: just curious

Him: Yes i did.

Me: i still don't understand why

Him: He touched you, and made you pregnant that's why.

Me: You telling me that you gonna kill every guy that comes close to me?

Him: Yes because i can't lay my hand on you.

Me: That's a lot of work

Him: not for a person like me.

Me: Don't you get nightmares for every person

you kill?

Him: No i told you i don't have a heart and i don't have a conscious there's nothing that haunts me.

I hope Riley doesn't mean that.

Him: why are you asking?

Me: Just curious.

I don't wanna tell him about Sma as yet.

He came with popcorns and played a movie.

Me: what's the name of the movie?

Him: My favourite movie The Avengers.

Me: one last question

Him: Is this an interrogation?

Me: No there's a few things i wanna know

Him: Okay.

Me: Why haven't you killed Jack yet?

Him: i can't kill Jack

Me: Why?

Him: because his another reason why i haven't went to jail yet

Me: How?

Him: his my strong Alibi

Me: His your Alibi?

Him: Yes I'll tell you some other time it's a complicated story.

Me: Okay

Him: Can we watch the movie

Me: Ya we can.

*****After 5min*****

Me: So what about your mom?

Him: We never gonna watch this movie are we?

Me: i can't watch I'm blind..

Him: I have hired a PI to look for her.

Me: In Germany?

Him: Yes

Me: i hope they find her

Him: me too.

Me: i think i wanna take a bath

Him: Let's go I'll help you.

We walked upstairs and i sat on the bed while he filled the bathtub with water.

Him: come your bath is ready.

I stood up then he came to undress me.

Me: this is awkward

Him: Why?

Me: That I'll have to be dependent from now on

Him: i don't mind this job of undressing you, i can even bath you..

Me: now you pushing it.

After undressing me he walked me to the bathroom and helped me get in the bathtub.

Him: Just call me when you done

Me: Okay

Him: Everything is within reach.

Me: Okay thank you.

Him: You welcome.

He kissed me on my forehead and left.

I relaxed in the bathtub for +-30min.

I called Riley when I was done, he came and helped me get out of the bathtub and gave me a towel i dried myself, he helped me put lotion, then my Pjs.

Me: I have to put on my eye drops.

Him: Where are they?

Me: check on top of the dressing table.

He got the eye drops and put them in my eyes.

I looked up for a couple of minutes so the eye drops can go deep in my eye balls. When i

looked down some of it ran down my cheeks and Riley wiped it.

Me: i wonder how long this is gonna take.

Him: Let's give it 2-3 weeks if you not ayt by then we'll go for a second opinion.

Me: Okay.

He came close put his hands around my waist and kissed me, was a deep passionate kiss that was turning me on. He went down on my neck busy biting me gently and i was running my fingers on his soft hair. He took off my Pj t-shirt and slowly rubbed my breasts, that was turning me on even more.

Me: Let's take it to the bed

Him: unfortunately that will have to wait, it's 8:15 and i ain't hearing the door close.

Aii Palesa and her bf are killing my vibe!

He gave me my pj top and i put it on.

Him: Someone has a death wish i see let me take out my gun.

Me: Riley you overreacting.

Him: I said 8pm, it's 8:15 Anathi how am i overreacting?

I don't think there's anything I'm gonna say that will make sense to him right now.

I think he really took out the gun because i did hear the safe opening and closing, he held me by my hand and we walked downstairs.

The door opened.

Riley: Its about damn time!

Me: Is she back?

Riley: I said 8:00, it's 8:15 now where's the punk?

Palesa: as you can see his not here i came back alone!

Riley: He let you come back alone?

Palesa: Yes!

Riley: That is two strikes in one night! I am gonna fuck him up!

Palesa: There is no need for that because he dumped me!

Riley: At least there's one thing that he did right!

Palesa: Omg i cannot do this with you right now do you even see what you did wrong? All of this is because of you! He dumped me because of you!

Riley: Oh no he was always gonna dump you, i just made him do it sooner, i saved you from days of crying and eating ice cream because a punk that broke your heart.

Me: Riley mara..

Palesa: You know what uncle Riley? Don't ever talk to me ever again!

She walked upstairs still talking.

Riley: That went good.

Me: Really Riley? You don't see what you did wrong?

Riley: No all i see is that im a hero, i saved her from a heartbreak!

Me: Please walk me upstairs i wanna sleep.

He held my hand and walked me upstairs. I put on a blind fold and got in bed, i haven't had the nightmares for a while and i was happy. I passed out i didn't even hear Riley getting in bed....i woke up in the morning took of the blind fold and my eyes blinked,i poked them hard and i could actually feel a lil pain from poking them. I could open and close them, oh my God i was soo happy but unfortunately i was still blind. I called out Riley and he came.

Him: What's wrong?

Me: I can close my eyes, i can blink, and i can feel.

Him: Really?

Me: Yes malove.

Him: that's good snuggle bunny, at least that's the first sign that no permanent damage has been done.

Me:Yes baby it is.

Him: can you see?

Me: unfortunately no

Him: I'm sure you will regain your eye sight soon.

I smiled.

Him: Let's go down and have breakfast.

Me: I'd like that.

He helped me get up and we went to the bathroom i brushed my teeth and washed my face, then he walked me downstairs..

Him: sit down let me go get the girls..

He went up to get the girls and Mbali came to hug me.

Me: Palesa how you feeling today?

Riley: She didn't come down she's still sulking about what happened last night.

Me: that's sad

Riley: we'll just have breakfast on our own, yall can go sit at the table I'll make us some pancakes.

I held on to Mbali's shoulder while she led me to the table..

Mbali: You still can't see?

Me: Yes sweety

Mbali: You'll be fine

Me: i know sweety.

We sat at the table and Riley made us pancakes and put honey on top with orange juice.

Mbali: i love panlakes.

I laughed a lil.

Me: It's pancakes sweety..

Riley cut my pancakes in small pieces and poured me the orange juice.

I heard someone pulling out a chair.

Palesa: Good morning Anathi and Mbali.

Me: Morning sweety.

Mbali: Morning Palesa.

Riley: Good morning Palesa

She didn't reply.

Me: How did you sleep?

Palesa: Good i guess, and you?

Me: i slept fine.

Riley: Any plans for today Palesa?

She didn't reply

Riley: Dammit Palesa! Why does this guy mean soo much to you? What he can do for you i can do 10times better.

Palesa: Not everything is about money! I like this guy and you ruined it for me! I understand you trying to be a protective father but what you did yesterday was messed up.

Riley: And I'm not sorry that i did it! I will do it again if given the chance!

Palesa was yelling and so was Riley.

Me: Guys Please.

Palesa: That's it I'm moving out!

Riley: because of a boy?

Palesa: No because you ruining my life!

Riley: all of this because of a boy?

Me: All you had to do was just apologise

Riley: I'm not apologising right now!

We continued eating, when we were done Riley collected the plates and put them in the dishwasher.

Riley: Snuggle bunny you have to get ready we

going to the doctor

Me: doctor?

Him: Yes to check if you not you know..

Me: i don't know

Him: That situation that made you vomit remember? Can't say it in front of mbali

Me: Ohw ya that.

I heard someone coming down from the stairs.

Riley: You moving out for real?

Palesa: i wasn't tripping

Me: Palesa there's no need for this..

Palesa: i can't live here jail is even better i think.

Me: Riley can you please apologise

Riley: Fine! I'm sorry for yesterday.

Me: And to make it up to you next weekend I'll cook Kagiso can come and eat dinner with us then after dinner yall can go out for a movie and

you can come back at anytime you want?

Riley: Wtf?

Palesa: Really?

Me: Yes sweety.

Palesa: And is chuck norris here okay with that?

Riley: Ofcause I'm not okay with that!

Palesa: Okay then it's farewell goodbye.

Riley: Okay you win! He can come

Palesa: You won't be busy threatening him?

Riley: I'll try not too

Me: Riley..

Riley: Okay i won't threaten him.

Palesa: Then I'll stay.

Me: That was not hard was it?

Riley: Just go take your bath Anathi!

Me: Then help me go upstairs.

He came and helped me to go upstairs.

Him: What you did back there was fucked up!

Me: You want Palesa to hate you forever?

Riley: no she was gonna get over it!

Me: Yes in 2020 probably.

Him: Teens!

Me: Hey I'm a teen myself

Him: Sorry.

Me: just help me go to the bathtub.

He helped me to the bathtub, he put water for me, i undressed And got inside. After finishing bathing i got out and he handed me a towel i dried he helped me put lotion and helped me dress up.

Him: Let me bath too.

Me: Okay help me go downstairs.

He helped me go downstairs and i sat there

with my sisters while he went to bath.

Me: Have you guys seen my phone?

Palesa: Nope

Me: Can you call it?

She called it but no sound.

Me: Go check upstairs

She went and came back with it.

Palesa: Here it is, found it under the pillow

Me: Thank you

Palesa: And you have 3 missed calls

Me: from?

Her: Let me check..

Me: Okay

Her: From Diamond.

Me: call her for me.

She called her and gave me the phone.

Her: Hey stranger.

Me: Hey

Her: How are you?

Me: Good and you?

Her: I'm fine I've been calling but you weren't pickin up

Me: i can't answer my phone anymore

Her: And why is that?

Me: I'm blind.

She laughed.

Her: Mxm get out of here! You fuckin with me right?

Me: i wish i was

Her: Ehh are you serious girl?

Me: Yes girl

Her: How did that happen?

Me: Long story why don't you come to my place

and we'll talk about it over drinks this afternoon

Her: OK just tell me the address.

Me: i told her the address.

Her: Okay I'll be there this afternoon

Me: Can't wait.

Her: me too.

Riley came down and we went out to his car then drove to the doctor. We got to the surgery went in and we didn't sit that long at the waiting area then the receptionist told us to go in. Riley held my hand and we went in. We told the doctor about the pregnancy situation he did a test and Riley was right i was a week pregnant. Those news were overwhelming how am i gonna raise a baby while I'm blind, and Riley's lifestyle.

Riley sounded happy because he was busy thanking the doctor, and hugging me. We got to The car and drove home..

Riley: Should we tell the girls?

Me: Not yet it's still early.

Him: Okay i can't believe I'm gonna be a daddy

Me: Are we even ready for a baby?

Him:why you ask?

Me: i mean with all that's happening my blindness, your rough lifestyle.

Riley: There's no baby that's born into a perfect family, we just have to make this work and i promise you that I'm gonna put you and our baby first.

Me: I'm a bit scared about being a mom

Him: We'll go through it together as a team, you not alone we in this situation together.

I smiled, at least I'm not gonna go through this alone. We got home Palesa and Mbali were not around they left a note that they going out to the mall of which Riley read it to me. My phone

rang Riley answered it for me.

Riley: It's your friend she says she's here i told her to come up.

Me: Okay thank you.

Riley went to wait for her at the door. She got off the elevator and came in.

Diamond: Hello

Riley: Hi..

Diamond: Where is Anathi?

Riley: She's on the couch waiting for you..

She came to me and gave me a hug.

Diamond: Wow it's good to see you, you look good..

Me: i wish i can say the same thing.

Her: You really blind?

Me: i swear.

Riley: I'll be upstairs if you girls need me

Me: Okay..

Diamond: Hmmmmmm your man though

Me: Watch it his mine..

Diamond: i wish i can get a good man..

Me: You don't have a bf yet?

Her: i do mara his useless shame

Me: Useless how?

Her: His more of a lapdog it's easy to control him his too soft he can't stand up to me, i mean if he can't stand up to me how he gonna stand up to another man, i actually hit him physically he don't do nothing.

Me: that's why i got myself a soldier, that ain't scared to stand up for me, and his known to carry big things if you know what i mean.

Her: Mxm don't brag!

I laughed.

Me: Why you with him though?

Her: Because he has a good job and provides for me.

Me: Then shame you stuck with him.

Her: Don't remind me, what does a girl have to do to get a drink?

Me: Sorry you'll have to get yourself a drink.

Her: Do you have alcohol?

Me: Yeap there's a walk through fridge.

She stood up to go get a drink.

Her: your house is beautiful your man is rich neh?

Me: ya you can say that.

Her: You want a beer also?

Me: No thanks i don't drink anymore

Her: Since from when?

Me: been a month now, I'm trying to get straight with the Lord.

She laughed. Diamond and i chilled till late then she decided to go, i walked her to the elevator

Her: You can go back now.

Me: I'll go back up alone with the elevator you'll just press for me.

Her: Are you sure?

Me: Yes i need to familiarise myself with things

Her: Okay..

We got to the elevator and went down we got to The ground floor hugged her goodbye and she pressed the elevator for me and i went up, it stopped halfway and someone got in, i just heard a male voice greeting me, i greeted back.

Him: Were you going?

Me: Last floor, please tell me when it stops on the last floor so i can get off I'm blind

Him: that's sad to hear, I'll definitely tell you..

Him: I'm rogars..

Me: Anathi..

Him: nice knowing you Anathi

Me: likewise

The elevator stopped on the last floor but before i could even step out the man grabbed me and put his hand over my mouth..

Him: if you scream, I'll kill you! Do you understand?.

I nodded yes.

We went to his car and he put me in the trunk, it was stuffed and i was struggling to breath, i was worried about my baby it's still early days for me to have a miscarriage. The car stopped and he got me out of the trunk and walked me somewhere, i heard the door opening, we went in and he closed it and sat me on a chair.

Me: What do you want from me?

Him: Nothing sweetly it's not me who wants something from you!

I heard a familiar voice saying “why didn’t you blind fold her” the other nigga answered “No need partner she’s blind” he laughed. Aii maan i recognise this voice..

Man: Hello Anathi, usangikhumbula (do you remember me)

Oh no it can’t be!

Me: Mxova

Him: in a flesh!

Me: What do you want from me?

Him: You know what you did wena and i want you to pay!

Me: look i know you have beef with me and all that but for your own sake you better let me go.

He laughed..

Him: let you go?

Me: Yes.

He slapped me.

Me: What's gonna happen if i don't let you go?
You can't do nothing you blind you have no one
i heard your friend died so you at my mercy
right now,you in my territory

Me: yes you right i can't do nothing because I'm
blind but believe you me as soon as my
boyfriend realises that im gone his gonna look
for me and his gonna find me then kill you!

Him: Your bf?

Me: Yes the one you tried to stab that day.

He laughed

Him: ungadlali ngami Anathi(don't play with me
Anathi) what would that boy do? He couldn't
stand up for himself,how is he gonna save you?

Me: Mxova listen to me, his dangerous don't
mess with him.

He kicked me hard on my chest and i fell
backwards with the chair, i Hit the ground hard,
he had me dragged and locked me up

Him: This is your new home, brace yourself you'll have to pee here on the ground and shit on the ground and sleep on the ground no blanket no nothing! And let's see if this boyfriend of yours will find you in time before you die of starvation because i ain't feeding you!

He went away laughing. I layed on the ground with my hand on my tummy and coughing that was a hard kick to my chest, i closed my eyes with tears running down..

Me: Riley please find us, before this psycho kills us!

Rate (31 Ratings)

[06/17, 18:40] Ron: PART 31 LOVE KNOWS NO COLOR

I wish i could say Riley came that night when i was kidnapped and he saved me but he did not. Days passed, weeks passed, then a month, i even lost hope that he will come and rescue us. Mxova was making my life difficult everyday, he wasn't feeding me properly i only ate 6 slices of bread a day, 2 In the morning, 2 in the afternoon, 2 at night with a glass of water. He wasn't playing when he said i should make my cell a toilet, i call it a cell because indeed it felt like i was in jail, it was smelly because it was half a sleeping place and half a toilet, i was smelling too because Mxova didn't want me to bath. I would vomit anywhere because of my morning sickness, and i don't know if my baby was still alive or not but i haven't experienced any bleeding so i am hoping that my baby is still okay. My eye sight was still not back and it was

getting worse now I moved from seeing white and shadows to seeing totally black because Mxova would actually throw me on the floor a couple of times and I'd bump my head. I didn't want to tell him about my baby what if he kills my baby. Mxova was just a typical Thug how he turned out to be this ruthless i have no idea, i slept in that cell every night with just one blanket why hasn't hypothermia killed me? i don't know. Life was hard for me that i even started being Religious, i prayed through my heart everyday asking God to save me. I was woken up in the morning by someone pouring water on me i jumped and the bastard laughed, it was Mxova's right hand man Rogers.

Him: You should've seen how you jumped! Like a chicken.

Me: What can i do for you?

Him: It's Time to wake up! And clean this mess you very disgusting you living like a pig!

Me: Thanks for an update

He came and squeezed my cheeks very hard.

Him: Am i sensing attitude?

I shook my head no.

Him: Clean this cell and then I'll get you some water so that you can bath! Today is just me and you there's no Mxova!

Me: I'm blind i can't clean.

He slapped me hard and i came in contact with the wall.

Him: i didn't ask you if you can clean on not! So get on with it!

He threw the mop at me and the bucket, he went out and locked. I sat there crying busy talking to myself.

Me: Riley were are you? I need you our baby needs you, why haven't you come to save us, God Please help him to find us!

I crawled and got hold of the mop and bucket and started cleaning i didn't know what i was doing but i just cleaned. After an hour of cleaning the Nigga came back i was even getting tired of cleaning.

Him: That's enough cleaning for now! Time for your bath!

He brought me water!

Him: Now start undressing and bathing..

I didn't hear him going out of the cell.

Me: Are you gonna be watching me?

Him: Ofcourse I'm gonna watch this is a good show!

Yooh i hope this guy doesn't rape me. I undressed slowly.

Him: Make it quick!!!!

Me: I'm trying

He came and just ripped the clothes off my

body.

Him: Now start bathing!

I bath myself in that awkward situation. Then when i was done he came to me and kissed me i bit his lip, he sent me flying to the wall!

Him: You little bitch im gonna kill you!

He came to me and got me up by my hair i was already screaming then i heard a voice saying "what are you doing"

Rogers: Partner i was just..

Mxova: Where you trying to rape her?

Rogers: Ofcause not!

Mxova: Then why is she naked?

Rogers: She was bathing!

Mxova: Voetsek! Fuck off!

Rogers: But Part..

Mxova: i said fuck off!!!

I think Rogers went out and Mxova came to help me get up.

Mxova: did he rape you?

Me: No he didn't.

Mxova: i shouldve never left you with him!

I didn't reply..

Mxova: Anathi i hate treating you like this, all of this can come to an end if you just agree to be my woman, I've always loved you Anathi, Think about it we can be bonnie and Clyde start our own empire.

Me: And how are we gonna do that?

Him: We gonna run the streets of Zone 5! Then we make our way up the ladder you have skills and i have skills we can do this!

Me: What about my boyfriend?

Him: Agh that white boy, he's soft, he's weak! We'll take him out nge goni! (we take him out

with a knife) remember how scared he was that day when i went to him, impatha lento yakho (that thing of yours is a fool)

Me: I love him though.

Eish nami i have a big mouth!

Mxova: Fuck Anathi! Vele even manje ufuna ukumfela lo whitey? (even today you wanna die for him)

Uphi manje (were is he)

I didn't reply.

Him: i thought you said his gonna come and save you, it's almost been a month Anathi! I'm giving you an opportunity of a lifetime right now! So uthin? (what do you say) uhamba nami or not? (you going with me or not)

I wish i could say yes mara i won't betray Riley i love him to death.

Mxova: You've made your bed now you going to lie in it.. Rogers zwakala la (come here) come

with a video cam.

A video cam? For what manje

Me: A video cam for what?

Him: We sending u Whitey a message and let's see if he loves you enough to come and save you!

I wonder what Mxova is gonna do Thixo! (lord)

Rogers came with the video cam cause i heard Mxova saying "is it on"

Rogers: It is on!

Mxova: Let's send him a message can i talk now?

Rogers: Yes!

Mxova: Hello whitey! It's me u Mxovisto maxovana kaMxova!

I want to tell you that you are weak! I have your girlfriend for a month now and you haven't come to save her! I hope this will send out a

strong message so that you can come and we finish this off nje ngama doda (we finish this off like men)

Mxova came close and i heard him takin off his belt

Mxova: I hope you recording this!

Rogers: Yes I am.

After that Mxova pinned me down, i couldn't fight him off he was strong and i was weak, all i could do is scream and cry. He came on top of me and raped me, it was soo painful i was crying thinking of my baby what if this makes me loose my baby! Mxova was moaning as if like he was enjoying this.

Mxova: Come close Baba! I want him to see her tears.

He was even chocking me i was coughing and couldn't breath. After 10minutes he was done and ejaculated on my face, i turned to face the

wall with my knees raised up to my chest and hugging them.

Mxova: i want you to know that i did this! Me u Mxovisto!

He then kicked me at the back 3 times.

Rogers: How are you gonna send this?

Mxova: Leave it at his door stop because you know his house, make sure no one sees you.

They went out laughing. I layed there crying and put my hand on my tummy.

Me: Don't leave me too, be a strong boy for mommy.

I believed that it's a boy.

I cried until i couldn't crying anymore,and i laid there emotionless. The cell opened again and someone came in.

Mxova: Yazı Anathi if this guy doesn't come after this, shame then he doesn't love you

sister's the video is on its way to his place, then he threw clothes at me and left.

I was feeling them to check what it is and it was a long sleeve dress, i dressed up and sat at the corner. I laid the blanket laid there busy crying and thinking that at least Riley will get the video and that will motivate him to find me.

Haike a week passed still nothing, mara how can Riley do this to me, his this professional thug mara he can't find were i am. In that week Mxova didn't touch me they just gave me food i was alone most of the time. Until my cell opened,i was sitting at my corner like always.

I started freaking out.

I felt a puff of smoke blown on my face,i coughed.

Mxova: You still choosing that whitey over me?

I kept quiet.

Mxova: It's been a week since we sent him that

video mara Nothing, i mean if someone sent me a video like that and they fuckin my girl i would hunt them down and kill them! Wouldn't you Rogers?

Rogers: I'd hang them!

Mxova: You still choose him?

I kept quiet.

Him: Stand up!

I stood up.

He ripped the dress and i felt something burning me in my left nipple, i tried to put my hand over to protect myself but Mxova just hit my hand!

Mxova: i hope in this one he will see how skinny you are! With a big tummy!

Rogers: Malnutrition right there!

Mxova: Put down the video cam and tie her up.

Rogers came to me and tied me to the bars of

the cell door with my back facing them all naked. I felt a whooping on my back and legs it was horrible i cried and cried, Mxova hit me till he was tired and i had ran out of strength i couldn't even stand still anymore, they untied me and threw me on the floor and threw the blanket over me,i was down and out i heard them talking but their voices where faint.

Rogers: Is she dead?

Mxova: I don't know! Wena send the video.. Go!
Then i felt someone touching me on my face.

Mxova: Anathi wake up Malove i didn't mean to hurt you like this, I just wanted you to see how useless your bf is so that you can choose me! I can protect you!

That would be true if you didn't rape me right now!

He went and came back then i felt him dressing me up and i was picked up and laid on a

mattress with blankets. He forced me to eat soft porridge which i vomited, then he made me drink painkillers and left me. I was soo weak I laid there. I laid there for a while without moving or anything just tears falling i wanted death to come over Me at that point!

Then something amazing happened i saw a white light the light was shining too bright then it seized, when it seized i saw Sma she was wearing a White dress and glowing with whiteness, she looked like an angelic spirit with a beautiful smile on her face.

Me: Kaaaaazi...

She didn't say anything just continued smiling.

I was in tears now..

Me: Kazi I'm sorry..

I saw tears falling down from her face too, but her tears looked weird they were shinny like a crystal or a diamond and she was still smiling

through those tears.

Me: Kazi take me with you..

She just shook her head no.

Me: Kazi..

She put her finger on her lips and said “Shhhhh” then she disappeared. It must’ve been a dream because i can’t see I’m blind!

Days passed and i was regaining my strength, Mxova would bath me, feed me and all that i don’t know why he was being like that. Riley still didn’t come, i gave up hope on him. I regained my strength i was a bit strong now, Mxova came in my cell while i was sitting there.

Mxova: Eita

Me: Hey

Him: Still lo whitey wakho akakezi! (still your whitey hasn’t come)

Me: You were right! He won’t come.

Mxova: Vele he won't.

Me: I accept your offer I'll be your bonnie.

He paused a bit.

Me: Mxova

Him: i hope you not saying that just because you don't wanna go through hell!

Eish vele i don't wanna go through hell! So it's best i just take Mxova's offer because Riley doesn't care about me and his baby and i don't want Mxova putting me through hell again.

Me: I'm serious i swear.

He came and kissed me.

Him: Uyenze isgebengu sajabula (you made a thug happy)

I smiled, Ofcause i didn't love him!

Him: Let's call this whitey of yours and tell him to stay away sowuthathiwe(you are taken)

Do you know his number?

My heart skipped a bit.

Me: no

Him: Ugazohlanya wena (don't be crazy) you have to know his number don't make me mad!

Leme just give him before he puts me through hell again, i gave him and he called him the phone rang and he answered.

Riley: Yeah?

Yoooh i felt this excitement and this unexplainable emotions when i heard his voice, i even smiled a lil

Mxova: wola baba Mxova here!

Riley kept quiet.

Mxova: ihambile lenja yakho (your dog is gone)

Riley's voice became firm, i know his mad as hell when his voice becomes firm.

Riley: So you the one who touched my girl?

Mxova: She's not your girl anymore baba you

are gone! Wenza kancane (you doing slow) tell him Anathi!

I didn't know what to say!

Mxova: Aii Voetsek khuluma wena! (talk wena)

Me: Riley...

That's all i could say because i was getting emotional.

Riley: Snuggle bunny I'm gonna find you, and I'm gonna kill that Bastard!!!

Mxova: Ela baba you are in no position to make threats!

Riley: What you did to my girl you gonna pay for it bro and that is a promise!!! I swear when i find you, you will wish that you never messed with my girl!! You don't know who i am!

Mxova: You don't know who i am too! I am uMxova maxovisto!

He hung up!

Mxova: Manje wena why didn't you talk?

Me: i was scared!

Him: You lying wena you still love him i saw how your face lit up when i was talking to him!

Me: No Mxova.

Mxova: Tonight we sending him another video.

He went. I was crying praying for Riley to come. Then after a few hours i heard the door opening.

Mxova: Come Roger another video this time we make it cruel and painful! We kill her!

Me: Mxova please..

Mxova: Voetsek wena! This is for this boy that you keep on wanting to die for! He will never save you Anathi!

tonight you will die for him for real!

Me: I love you Mxova i don't love Riley!

Mxova: You are ly...

Rogers: Wait did you just say Riley?

Me: Yes

Rogers: Riley Muller? You Riley Muller's girl?

Me: Yes..

I heard something falling

Mxova: What are you doing breaking our video cam?

I heard Rogers voice becoming shaky like his scared!

Rogers: You dating the Sniper?

Mxova: Ntwana yini you look scared?

Rogers: I am sorry i didn't know you were dating the Sniper! Please forgive me for putting you through this!

I felt him on my feet busy saying sorry.

Rogers: Let me help you get up

Yoooh he was shaking when he touched me i

was wondering why he was soo scared.

Mxova: Fuck off wena maan i called the boy his full of threats!

no action!

I wonder how Rogers know Riley

Rogers: You called him?

Mxova:Yes!

Rogers: When?

Mxova: about 4 hours ago

Rogers: with your cell phone?

Mxova: Yes

Rogers: No, no, no, no, no this is not happening again we have to go!

Mxova: Go were?

Rogers: far from here! You called him 4 hours ago that's your death sentence he traced your call

Mxova: What does that mean?

Rogers: It means The Sniper is Already here! If you don't wanna go I'm going i don't wanna die! I heard footsteps I think it was Rogers running and the door opening and closing.

Mxova: Voetsek your coward! Anathi this weak boy of yours won't touch me I'm even gonna kill you while his not here!

Mxova came and started strangling me vele this was my dying day i couldn't breath couldn't scream. Then i heard a voice saying "Didn't i tell you that I'm gonna find you, take your filthy hands off my girl" Mxova took off his hands off me.

Mxova: so finally you came?

Yeap the Sniper was here!

Save

Rate (33 Ratings)

[06/17, 18:42] Ron: PART 32 LOVE KNOWS NO COLOR

I was soo relieved that Riley came.

Mxova: So you just brought yourself to a gun fight you must have a death wish!

Riley: from how i see it you the on who has a death wish!

Mxova: How can I have a death wish if I'm the one with a gun in my hand!

Riley: You kidnapped and touched my woman! I am gonna fucken kill you!

Mxova sent out a mocking laugh.

Mxova: What you gonna kill me with? Your hands?

Riley: No actually I'm gonna take your fucken gun and then kill you with it!

Mxova: Sizoke sibone (we'll see)

I heard some fighting and struggling ohh lord this is not good, then i heard someone falling and there was silence for at least 5min. I was sitting there scared not knowing who was beaten up, then the silence was broken.

Riley: Snuggle bunny

I actually put my hand on my chest i was so relieved that it's not Riley who got ass kicked i even started crying,he came to hug me.

Riley: Sorry i took long to find you.

I think he was crying too because i heard some sniffing.

Me: i thought you forgot about us!

He put his hands on my cheeks and his forehead against mine.

Him: I was searching for you all day and night, since you went missing i couldn't sleep or do anything i was just thinking about you and my baby..

Then he put his hand on my tummy

Riley: Is my baby okay?

Me: I think so..

Riley: I'm gonna make them pay in a very painful way!

Me: just take me home.

He picked me up and we went..

Riley: Jamie!

Jamie: I'm here

Riley: Take Anathi home, I'll be right there..

Jamie came to take me, i held on to Riley very tight.

Me: Riley don't leave me!

Riley: I'm not i just wanna..

Me: No i don't want Jamie to take me home, i want you to take me home!

Him: Okay I'll take you home. Jamie, Brad, and Jennifer.

They all responded by "we here"

Riley: Take this bastards and lock them up in a warehouse or something I'm not done with them!

Riley carried me to the car, and drove off.. I was holding his hand the whole time i didn't want him to leave me.

Him: We gonna start off at the hospital just to do some checkup and make sure that you okay then after we going straight home okay?

Me: Okay.

We got to The hospital, doctors ran tests on me,

Riley didn't leave my side he even went with me to the showers and i showered,then put on the hospital gown and got in bed.

Me: Riley i want you to get in bed with me

Him: but the bed is too small for the both of us.

Me: I want you next to me

Him: I'm here,I'll be sitting here on the chair next to you..

Me: don't leave me

Him: I'm not gonna leave you.

The doctor came back.

Doctor: Good evening again.

Ehh it was at night being stuck there i didn't even know if it was day or night..

Doctor: We have sent the blood samples to the lab and we'll get the results tomorrow.

Me: When can i go home?

Doctor: I'm not sure because i still wanna see your progress

Me: I wanna go home

Doctor: You've been through a traumatic experience and i want to observe you first if you won't have depression because of this and i want you to talk to a psychologist about this.

Me: No Doctor i just wanna go home.

Doctor: I'm afraid i can't let..

Me: I wanna go home!!! *shouting*

Riley: Calm down Snuggle bunny you will go home..

Me: i wanna go home Riley i just wanna be with you and the girls.

Riley: I will take you home i promise, doctor she's also pregnant can you please check for us if the baby is okay?

Doctor: Okay let's do a Scan.

Riley held my hand and the doctor put the Gel on my tummy was a bit cold then ran that thing around my tummy.

Doctor: We waiting to hear a heartbeat

The doctor went on and on but no heart beat i was starting to get very worried, then after some few minutes we heard the heartbeat yoooh i let out a deep sigh

Doctor: There we go the baby is fine.

Me: Thank God!

Riley: I really didn't think that my baby was gonna make it.

Doctor: The baby is strong just like the mom.

Riley: You right there Doc i have one hell of a strong family!

Doctor: You seem a little bit underweight so i will need you to eat Nutritional food i will refer you to a dietician so they can draw up a good food plan for you, and please stick to it and take

care of yourself rest alot too it will be good for the baby because the baby looks very tiny

Riley: I'll make sure that she's well taken care off.

Doctor: If there's nothing else i will see you tomorrow.

Riley: Thank you Doctor.

The doctor left.

Riley: Think we should get you something to eat

Me: Not now

Riley: I'm not taking chances Anathi!

He went and called the nurse and the nurse had food brought in for me, and Riley was feeding me. It was a steak, mash potatoes, and other vegetables. The food tasted good and i was very hungry.

Him: did those bastards even feed you?

Me: A few slices of bread a day and water

Riley: Wait until i start with them, they gonna actually beg me to kill them!

Me: What you gonna do to them?

Him: You don't wanna know.

I didn't care what Riley was gonna do to them i wanted them dead.

Riley: how's your eye sight?

Me: I went from seeing white to completely seeing black

Riley: we gonna go see Dr G.

Me: Okay.

Riley: Why don't you get some rest

Me: will you be here when i wake up?

Riley: Yes i will.

He kissed me and put his hand on my tummy and started rubbing it until i fell asleep.....sleeping was hard it was very hard i was just

thinking about Mxova what he put me through and that he might come to finish me off, i woke up screaming with my heart Beating fast, i was struggling to breath and sweating.

Me: His gonna kill me! His gonna kill me!

Riley came to hold me..

Riley: No one is gonna kill you, i won't let anyone put you through this experience ever again.

My breathing was seizing Riley had to call the doctor, the doctor came in with nurses..

Doctor: Nurse give her an oxygen before she suffocates the baby.

Nurse: Sir you will have to step out a bit.

Me: No! Riley don't leave me!

Him: I will be back when they done

I was crying and holding on tight to his hand.

Me: Riley Nooo!! His gonna kill me!

Riley: Can't i stay with her?

Nurse: I'm afraid you can't.

The nurse tried holding my hand i took her hand and bit it.

She screamed a bit

Doctor: We gonna have to sedate her!

Nurse2: Yes doctor

Doctor: Don't give her a high dosage because she's pregnant.

Nurse2: I'll keep that in mind.

I was kicking and screaming trying to get off bed..

Me: Riley!!!!

please don't leave me

More nurses were called to come and pin me down while one sedated me.

Me: His gonna come back and kill me! Don't let him kill me...

Those were the last words i said, because after that i felt an injection going through my skin then in a few minutes i was out!... I woke up In the morning i hope.

Me: Riley.

Doctor: Good morning

Me: Where's my boyfriend?

Doctor: he just went out didn't wanna Disturb you because you were sleeping.

Me: Can i go home today?

Doctor: You really wanna be out of here don't you?

Me: i wanna go home please..

I heard footsteps coming in, i freaked out.

Me: Who is that?

Riley: It's me.

Me: Please don't leave me..

Him: i didn't wanna Disturb you.

Doctor: your results came this morning

Riley: What do they say?

Doctor: She tested Negative for everything.

That was good to hear..

Riley: Can i take her home today?

Doctor: It's okay since you guys are forcing,you'll sign the discharge papers at the reception.

Me: Thank you Doctor.

I showered while Riley snuck out to go buy me clothes. He came back i got dressed and we went.

Him: We gonna pass by at Dr G's office..

Me: Okay.

We drove to Dr G's surgery and luckily she was there,we went to the consulting room

Dr G: How is my patient today?

Me: I'm okay i guess

Dr G: You must've regained your eye sight by now.

Riley: We wouldn't be here if that was soo

Dr G: What happened?

Riley: She had an accident and shit happened and she's seeing black now.

Dr G put her hand on my chin..

Dr G: Can you see the light?

Me: No

Dr G: That's not Good, what really happened?

Me: I was..

Riley: Like i told you G she had an accident!

Hau why was Riley acting like this all of a sudden..

Dr G: I'm just asking because i need to come up

with a good diagnosis based on what happened.

Riley: she had an accident and now she's seeing darkness! Don't make me repeat myself again!

Dr G: Did you bump your head again?

Me: Yes

Dr G: How many times?

Me: 3 times i think

Dr G: That is not good, I think you have caused more damage to the ophthalmic nerve, and you might not be able to regain your eye sight.

Is she saying I'm gonna be blind forever?

Riley: Something can be done right? An operation of some sort, i mean she can't lose her eye sight just like that!

Dr G: i think that..

Riley: Fuck G! I don't pay you to think! I pay you to know! For fuck'sake you have a degree in this shit!!

Dr G: i am not God! i am an optometrist i cannot perform miracles!

Riley: Fuck you! What? Are you too good for my money now!

I wonder what's gotten into Riley why was he soo angry.

Me: Riley please..

Riley: No Anathi i pay this bitch 20times what her usual patients pay her!

Dr G: I know you and i have a history, i know you have saved me from a life of tragedy when i was down and out..

Riley: And now it seems like you have forgetting about that!

What history? Have they dated before.

Riley: If you can't pull this off get someone who can actually do this!

Dr G: But Riley I'm still..

Riley didn't wait for Dr G to talk he grabbed me by my hand and we went to the car, when he got into his side of the car he banged the door sooo hard that i jumped a little

I was even scared to say something, his phone started ringing while we were driving like that, he answered and put it on loud speaker

Riley: Yeah?

Jamie: Sniper..

Riley: What do you have for me?

Jamie: Still trying boss..

Riley Hit the steering wheel.

Riley: Don't fucken drive me crazy than i already Am Jamie get me something!

Jamie: on it.

Riley: And tell the crew that we meeting at my place tonight at 20:00

Jamie: I'll do that.

Riley: And Jamie..

Jamie: Yes?

Riley: Make sure that you fucken have something for me tonight because if you don't..

Jamie: I'll try my best.

Jamie hung up.

Riley: they starting to forget who i am, i must remind them!

Me: Why you so angry?

Him: I'm not Angry.

I didn't take the convo further.

Riley: i saw those bastards This morning, seeing their faces does something to me!

Haike Shame i decided to keep quiet because i might say something and it will tick him off. We got the building went to the elevator which dropped us at the door and we went in.

Riley: Palesa we home!

I couldn't wait to see my sisters!

Me: Yooh i can't wait to see them.

Palesa and Mbali didn't come down.

Me: Are they even here?

Him: They better be!

Me: Ain't they supposed to be at school?

Riley: It's a holiday.

Riley went upstairs to check up on them, and i think he didn't find them because he came back down all pissed.

Riley: They not here! I told them not to leave the house!

He kept quiet for a while then i heard something being thrown against the wall after a few minutes.

Kanti kwenzakalani ngo Riley (what's happening with Riley)

Riley: her fucken phone is on voice mail!! Palesa

Is testing my patience!

Me: Maybe they went to..

Riley: I told them not to leave the house! Until i get them a bodyguard what if they get kidnapped?

Aii mara Palesa likes provoking people..

Palesa and Mbali came in while Riley was still fuming.

Palesa: Anathi!!!!

I heard footsteps, think they were running to me,then i heard "ouch"

Riley: What did i say? Didn't i say stay indoors Palesa?

Palesa: We went to get ice creams down the street..

Riley: i don't care even if it was next door! When i stay indoors i mean it! What if you guys got kidnapped?

Palesa: but we were not kidnapped.

Riley Hit the table, that it freak out mbali and she started crying.

Me: Riley! Can you calm down can't you see that you scaring them?

Mbali came to hug me and i picked her up.

Riley: You won't be saying that when they kidnapped!

He clicked his tongue and left

Palesa: Okay what was that all about?

Me: mxm his in his moods

Palesa: I'm glad you back how was your vacation?

Me: Vacation?

Palesa: Uncle Riley told us you went on a vacation

I think he didn't wanna worry them.

Me: ohh it was okay.. Can i get a tight hug from yall? I missed you guys alot

Palesa came and we hugged i didn't think i was gonna see them again, i hugged them tight with tears falling

Palesa: Are you Okay?

Me: i just missed you.

Her: We missed you too.

I wanted to spend this whole day with them and i did, we watched movies and ate popcorns, even though i couldn't see anything, i did everything they wanted to do i didn't care what it was as long as we together. at around 18:00 we all bath and chilled in their bed eating ice cream and talking they were telling me about school and other things, they painted my nails, we chilled till late and they walked me to my bedroom because they wanted to sleep. Riley wasn't in the bedroom i was scared to be alone i asked Mbali to walk me downstairs, i was

holding on to her shoulder, we got to The stairs and heard Riley shouting,we stopped to listen.

Riley: You slacking Jamie! And you fucken pulling me back!

Jamie: I'm sorry..

Riley: Sorry is not good enough! Anyway what do you have for me?

Jamie: The other nigga lives with his mother and little brother(Mxova) ,then Rogers with his Fiancé and she's 6 months pregnant and they also have a 5 year old daughter

Riley: That's something to work on, i want the fiancé's baby to be ripped off her tummy while she's still alive, i want the head of his 5 year old daughter to be cut off! I want you guys to put them through pain that they will never forget i want them repeatedly raped too, and the ghetto wannabe thug i want his mom to be put in a cell with 10 men and be raped ridiculously call the superintendent to set that up, i want his

brother's dick cut off and fed to my pitbul then i want his brother to be set on fire, i want them to see the agony that their families will go through i want everything recorded! I want them to kill themselves with Guilt and the fact that they can't save them!

Ohh my Word!!! I put my hand over my mouth in shock!

Brad: That is.. Don't you think you taking this situation a bit too far!

Jennifer: Brad is right that's beyond being heartless

Riley: Yall know who you working for, so why you acting all brand new?

Jamie: We don't deal with killing we strictly rob banks

Riley: Then you gonna start today!

Jennifer: You overreacting R..

Riley: Don't fucken tell me I'm overreacting! Go

upstairs to my girlfriend and tell her I'm overreacting! Did you fucken see what they put her through?you watched the fucken videos! She can't sleep at night because of what those bastards put her through! This thing is forever gonna haunt her! I almost lost my unborn baby! I almost lost my family because of two immature thugs who don't know who the Sniper is! That's my fucken family Jen, You touch them you touch me!

Yooh Lord have mercy!

[06/17, 18:43] Ron: PART 33 LOVE KNOWS NO COLOR

I couldn't believe Riley was saying all this things, i told mbali to take me to my bedroom and she did. I sat on the bed crying, i understand that They angered him mara to go this far as to involving innocent people that's just heartless,what am i dating, A human being or a

monster? I sat there crying i even cried about other things, i was just too depressed and Riley came in while i was still crying.

Him: What's wrong?

Me: Nothing

Him: No one cries over nothing.

Me: i overheard what you said to the crew, how you involving innocent people in this.

He came and sat next to me.

Him: So why you crying?

Me: Because i.. I don't know if you..

I paused i don't know if it was appropriate to call him names right now.

Riley: If I'm?

Me: things that you say are scary. Riley i don't wanna be afraid of you and from how i see things it's gonna come to a point were I'm gonna be very scared of you.

Him: Anathi I can't forgive i don't have a heart!

Me: I'm not saying forgive I'm saying don't murder innocent people.

Him: They made shit personal when they touched you! And people who know me know very well never to get personal!

Me: i don't care what you do to them but leave their families out of this! Imagine if someone could punish Mbali and Palesa because of your sins!

Him: Anathi I'm not gonna let this slide! What they did to you angers me in a way that i can't even explain, i want them to feel what you felt! I want to make them pay the best way i know how!

Me: Then you not different from them.

Him: Fuck Anathi! *shouting*

I don't understand why you don't see things like i do

Me: i don't wanna see things how you see them!

Him: You shouldn't care what i do!

Me: There's nothing I'm gonna say that's gonna make sense to you right now because clearly you have made up your mind!

Him: You right about that!

Me: Then I'll just have to take my sisters and go because i need to protect my baby, how would he feel growing up and finding out that his father did this and that to innocent people!

I think i got him with that because he was speechless. I stood up and tried to find my way to the bathroom,he stood up and tried to help me.

Me: Thank you but I'll find my way.

He let me go and i was busy moving slowly with the wall till i felt the bathroom door and went it. I located my way to the basin, leaned on it and started crying. While i was crying like that i felt

someone wrapping their hands around my tummy and kissed me at the back of my neck.

Riley: I'm sorry..

I ignored him.

Him: You see why i need you in my life?
Because you the only person that keeps me sane.

Me: does that mean you gonna let this go?

Him: Yes i will but I'm not letting those 2 go.

Me: I don't care about those 2.

Him: let me run you a bath so that you can bath and go to bed.

Me: That surely makes me feel like a kid

Him: You are a kid you 19

I laughed a lil. He ran me a bath i went in and he went to the shower, we were busy talking i wanted to hear his voice so i know that his still around. I finished taking a bath and he stepped

out of the shower. We dried ourselves and i was a bit uncomfortable with him helping me to put lotion on especially after being violated sexually but i didn't wanna show him, he helped me put on my Pjs and we got in bed, he slept behind me while hugging me tight that made me feel safe.

Me: Snuggle bunny

Him: Yeah?

Me: Why do they call you a sniper?

Him: Because i am good with the Sniper gun.

Me: Why did you choose this life?

Him: Alot happened in my life i don't really wanna get into details but i was abused in a way that no human being should be abused, i was starting to live in fear and i was young back then i was about 9 the abuse went on until i was in my twenties. I never told anyone i buried everything inside and that created alot of anger

and hatred that i replaced fear with anger and that's how I became this ruthless.

Me: That's deep!

Him: You haven't heard the worst yet, and I'm not gonna tell you I'd rather not talk about that part of my life because if we keep on talking about it the Anger that was long buried will come out and i don't want you to see me at my worst.

Ehh i thought this was his worst.

Him: Will you be able to sleep?

Me: I'll try

Him: should i rub your tummy to help you sleep?

Me: That might work.

He rubbed my tummy.

Him: You think it's a boy?

Me: Yes

Him: i think it's a girl

Me: well you wrong!

Him: You'll see..

Me: You want a girl?

Him: I'm fine with either, just that if it's a girl then she's in trouble

Me: Boyfriend situation?

Him: Yes! I don't want no punk breaking my daughter's heart!

Me: My poor baby shame,that's why i pray it's a boy.

He laughed and kissed me

Him: Let's sleep goodnight

Me: Night..

Him: You know what you've never sang to me.

Me: I don't know how to sing

Him: Try

Me: So you can laugh?

Him: i won't laugh i promise

Me: Okay any song?

Him: Yes but it has to have some kind of message

Me: Okay uhm do you listen to local songs?

Him: Maybe one or two songs..

Me: Okay Leme sing you...

Him: Let's hear it..

Me: I'm just gonna say a few lines

Him: It's Okay snuggle bunny.

Me: Sobe ndimfumane omunye
ondiphambanisa njengawe.. <3 <3 wena
uphethe inhliziyo yami oohh la la la la <3 <3
Singing

Him: Okay if we were praying Amen.

I laughed.

Me: we weren't praying i was singing you a

romantic song.

Him: That i didn't understand because you sang it in your language you very racist I'll get you.

I laughed,he kissed me goodnight.

Me: i love you

Him: I love you more.

I tried sleeping but it was still hard... I would sleep and wake up after 10min or so i fell asleep after a while.....i must've slept for only 3 hours when i was woken up by people making noise busy singing me happy birthday.

Palesa: Anathi wake up!

Me: Why are you guys making soo much noise?

I was still sleepy as hell!

Riley: because we excited about this birthday situation.

They started singing again.

Me: Okay yooh! Wtf guys it's not even my

birthday! My birthday long passed!

Riley: Ohh no its not for you!

Me: Then what the hell are yall waking me up so early for?

Palesa: It's the baby's birthday!

Me: Baby?

Palesa: Yeap uncle Riley told us about our niece/nephew

Me: Uyaphapha u Riley wenu! (This Riley of yours is too forward)

Mbali: And his 2months pregnant!

Riley: What she meant to say was today you 2months pregnant.

Me: And how you guys know?

Riley: i counted

Me: You have time!

Palesa: before i become late for school we all

made you breakfast, actually we made the little one breakfast.

Riley: Mbali present your plate first

Mbali: i did cornflakes with juice

Riley: Palesa..

Palesa: Save the best for last.

Riley: i made you oats and i put honey and Milk.

Palesa: And chef Palesa made the little one bacon, sausages, tomatoes, eggs, and toasted bread with Mango juice.

Me: Wow soo much to choose from

Riley: So what is it gonna be?

Me: Uhm Palesa's dish wins.

Palesa started rejoicing.

Riley: Okay you guys should go before you get late.

They came to give me kisses and gave the baby

kisses, and went.

Me: Let me brush my teeth.

Him: Let me help you.

He walked me to the bathroom and I brushed my teeth and went to eat my breakfast, it was nice but the eggs sent me to the toilet to vomit.

Riley: You should've tried the oats.

I rinsed my mouth.

Riley I have one last surprise for you.

Me: Okay.

He walked me out of the house, I was wondering where we were going we didn't walk that much.

Him: Surprise!

Me: What?

Him: You can't see it?

Me: Don't play with me you know I can't see

Him: Oh ya sorry i forgot

Me: Stop trippin!

He started wiggling keys close to my ear

Me: Is it a car?

Him: Yes!

Me: Wow i.. I don't know how to drive

Him: I'll teach you

Me: but we not even sure that I'll see

Him: I'll make sure that you get your eye sight back i promise.

Me: I know you will snuggle bunny, so what kind of a car is it?

Him: the latest Mercedes ML63

Me: I don't know that car

Him: It's big like a Range rover

Me: Wow and what colour is it?

Him: Silver!

Me: i think i love it!

He walked me to it so i can touch it, i put a hand on my tummy.

Me: Look sweetie daddy bought us a car.

He put his hand on top of mine..

Him: the day you escape your mother's womb
I'm buying you a lamborghini

My Angel

Me: You crazy!

Riley: What? This baby is rich already!

I heard Jamie's voice.

Jamie: Look at you guys acting like one happy
big family.

Me: Morning to you to Jamie.

Jamie: Yall bought new wheels?

Me: Yes my lovely boyfriend bought me

Jamie: Boyfriend? That doesn't have a nice ring

to it, Riley you should wife that.

Eyy Jamie waphapha shame.

Riley: If you ever wanna go anywhere snuggle bunny big mouth here will drive you!

Jamie: What? I can't be a chauffeur!

Riley: You are now! You have demoted yourself from being a Taker to being a chauffeur

Jamie: Why though?

Riley: Because of your big mouth.

Jamie: but I'm being for real!

Riley's phone rang.

Riley: i have to take this, I'll be back and Jamie don't leave her side

Jamie: You got it

Riley walked away to answer the phone.

Jamie: So how are you?

Me: It's still hard, i don't know

How I'm gonna get through this

Jamie: You won't get through it, well if you do the scars will still remain

Me: How do you know?

She let out a deep sigh.

Me: Jamie

Her: i was once abducted too and raped the whole night by 4 guys and they beat me almost to death

Me: Really?

Her: Yes when i was 16.

Me: What happened?

Her: You know how hard it is to be a lesbian

Me: I'm sorry

Her: It's Ayt because they six feet under now!

Me: You killed them?

Her: Yeap and i didn't have any mercy!

Me: You guys and murdering people!

I was a bit at ease known that other people have been through this it's not only me.

Riley came back and we went to the Penthouse.

Riley: Make yourself at home Jamie while we go change, but please don't finish my cheese

Jamie laughed and we went upstairs.

Me: can you believe Jamie told me she was raped and tortured too?

Her: She did?

Me: Yes

Him: You guys should talk, a broken heart can touch another broken heart.

Me: Yes we should because we relate to each other

Riley: She can be your psychologist

Me: probably she can.

Him: Jamie the psychologist i can just imagine.

He giggled a lil.

Me: Riley

Him: Snuggle bunny

Me: When Jamie mentioned marriage why did you react like that?

Him: React how?

Me: Like you don't wanna marry me

Him: I do wanna marry you

Me: When?

Him: i don't know Anathi time will tell

Me: Even after 20 years?

Him: i don't know how fate planned our future.

Me: So you saying we won't have a future?

Him: That's not what I said.

Me: Think i need air

Him: Anathi i didn't mean it like that.

I started walking trying to locate the door.

Me: Please don't follow me.

I located the door till i found it and went out, i was walking in the passage by the wall then i stopped and cried, can't believe Riley doesn't wanna marry me! After like 2min i heard a female voice behind me saying "crying is not good for the baby"

I turned around, who the fuck was that in my house! I swear if Riley brought a bitch in my house!

Me: And who are you? I swear if Riley brought a bitch in my house!

Her: I'm not that word you've just called me.

Me: Then what the fuck are you? And what do you want in my house?

Her: Your language is very offensive

This bitch was testing me.

Me: Bitch don't test me!

Her: I'm not a B, i have a name my name is
Tessa

I've heard that name before, then i heard Riley's
voice.

Riley: Ohh mom i see you've already met the
only woman in my life Ofcause after you.

Shit! That's my mother-in-law

i just bashed out!

[06/17, 18:45] Ron: PART 34 LOVE KNOWS NO
COLOR

Yooh i needed a hole to bury myself in at that
moment.

Me: Your mom?

Him: Yes remember i told you that i hired a PI to
track her down? And they found her she has

been staying with us since you disappeared.

Me: That's good i guess.

I mean how do i explain myself.

Her: You have a feisty one i should say

Him: And that's why i love her she doesn't let people intimidate her.

Her: i noticed especially when she called me a B.

Riley: You called my mom a bitch?

Me: I apologise i didn't know it was your mom

Him: Lucky she didn't kick your ass my mom knows Kung fu.

Tessa laughed.

Tessa: Why don't we go and have tea Anny so that we can talk

Ehh i hope she don't kick my ass

Me: I guess we can.

She held me by my hand and Led me

downstairs.

Tessa: Good morning Jamie

Jamie: Morning Tessa

Tessa: Still finishing our cheese i see

Jamie: I'm a rat i can't help it.

She sat me down at the kitchen table.

Tessa: I'm coming let me go and make us tea.

Eish this is awkward especially after bashing her out like that.

She came back with tea after a few minutes and sat down.

Tessa: You and i got off on a wrong foot.

Me: I know and I'm sorry for that, if only you knew how embarrassed i am right now.

She giggled.

Her: we can forget about that, At least i know my son has a strong feisty woman behind him.

I smiled a little.

Her: How are you?

Me: I'm fine thanks

Her: And how is the baby?

Me: The baby is good too

Her: Then I'm glad. Riley and i had a long talk about you.

I hope its good things

Her: i would really love for us to get to know each other better, you a big part of my son's life and i feel it's important that you and i have a healthy relationship.

Me: i think that's good.

Her: we can start off with the simplest things like going out shopping.

Me: i would love that but, since my.. Since i got kidnapped I'm a bit scared to be outdoors

Her: that's okay we can stay indoors

Me: That would be better.

I heard Riley's voice think he was coming down from upstairs.

Riley: has the doctor arrived Jamie?

Jamie: Yes sir Arrived yesterday

Riley: Is everything set?

Jamie: Everything is set.

Tessa: What doctor? Are you sick son?

Riley: It's not for me it's for Anathi.

Me: It's for me?

Riley: Yes his a specialist he will be helping Dr G with your operation which we are late for.

Me: Wait.. Wait.. Wait you moving too fast what did you just say?

Him: Sorry i didn't tell you about it i just wanted to surprise you.

The things that Riley does mara.

Me: We talking about my health and my life, an operation is a big thing if anything goes wrong i might die and you telling me that's a surprise!

Him: You won't die, he comes highly recommended his from England he has a PhD, but his from India originally but studied at England.

Me: I don't care! He can have a PhD or a Masters degree or an honors that still doesn't give you the right to do what you did!!

Jamie: Geez calm down.

Me: Don't tell me to fucken calm down!

I was soo angry i didn't care about Riley's mother being there,i was even crying.

Me: How can you do something like this to me?

Riley: Mom help me out here..

I heard Tessa whispering

Tessa: It's hormones.

Riley: i just wanna help you get your eye sight back.

Me: I don't wanna talk to you ever again!

Riley: Mom...

Tessa: she's right! What you did was wrong you should have talked to her about it first, you very wrong Riley.

Riley: Mom Wtf?

Tessa: This is an emotional journey an operation is not something you take lightly

Me: Exactly thank you Tessa!

Riley: I'm just trying to help

Tessa: Next time talk don't just go and do everything on your own.

Riley: i still don't know what i did wrong? I was just trying to help, Jamie do you see what i did wrong?

Me: Say one word and you not getting cheese

anymore.

Jamie: I'm sorry Riley but i have to side with the women on this one

Riley: Your loyalty lies with me

Jamie: I love cheese and you heard if i say a word i won't get cheese.

Riley: You a pussy!

Jamie: I am a female.

Riley: enough about this useless drama can we go?

Me: I'm not going anywhere

Riley: Anathi stop with your stubbornness the doctor will only be here for 2days and he planned for you to have your operation today, you might never get this chance ever again!

Me: i don't care!

Riley: You wanna be blind forever?

Me: That was uncalled for

Him: I'm just asking.

I felt a cloud of sadness coming over me.

Me: Tessa can you please walk me upstairs.

Tessa: Ofcourse darling, and Son shame on you!

Tessa held my hand and walked me upstairs

Riley: What did i say?

We got to my bedroom and Tessa sat me down
i was already in tears.

Me: Thank you

Tessa: don't cry darling, it's not good for the
baby

Me: I'm sorry..

Her: I know Riley can be insensitive sometimes
but don't let him get to you.

Me: I don't know why I'm soo emotional this
days

Her: It's not you darling it's who you carrying

that's making you this emotional, i know i was this emotional too when i was pregnant with Gina, ohh my poor baby.

Me: I'm sorry about Gina, must have been devastating hearing the news.

Her: You know when i heard I'm coming to South Africa i was happy that im gonna see my children, they have been taken away from me when they were just little, and finding out that one of them is no more it crushed my heart.

Me: I loved Gina too, she was like a sister to me..

Her: may her soul rest in peace.

I heard Riley talking.

Riley: has she stopped being dramatic?

Tessa: Riley try to be considerate

Riley: I am being considerate Tessa that's why i got her one of the best doctors money could ever buy.

Me: And i should be thankful i guess?

Tessa: Riley you wrong just admit it and stop trying to justify your wrongs, I'm gonna excuse myself you guys need to talk.

She kissed me on my forehead and walked out.

Riley: i really don't know what i did wrong I was just trying to surprise you.

Me: by putting my life in danger?

Him: No by trying to help you get your eye sight back!

Me: Then Thank you your Majesty.

Riley: Why you being like this?

Me: Why you being an asshole?

Riley: Okay I'm sorry, there I've apologized is that gonna make you sleep better at night?

Me: Riley if you don't wanna apologize then keep quiet what kind of an apology is that? You soo arrogant!

Me: And you are so fucken stubborn!

That wasn't nice to say,i looked away trying not to cry.

He came and held my hand..

Him: Snuggle bunny i get tired of fighting with you.

I didn't answer him..

Riley: I'm sorry i shouldn't have done what i did without your permission, i just wanted to surprise you thought you'd be happy

Me: i am happy but i wish you have told me about it

Riley: And next time i will, this will never happen again I'm sorry.

Me: Okay

Him: am i forgiven?

Me: Maybe.

Him: I'll take maybe it's better than No.

I smiled and looked down.

Him: can we please do this operation?

Me: It's that important to you?

Him: Very important

Me: Okay let me go bath.

He walked me to the bathroom ran my bath i bathe then dressed and we went out to his car, he opened the door for me i got in and he closed the door for me an we drove to the to the surgery.

Him:the operation will be at a private clinic.

Me: why?

Him:Dr G doesn't do operations in her surgery.

Me: Okay.

We drove to the clinic and went in, we asked for Dr G at the reception they called her for us and she came.

Dr G: You late.

Riley: We know

Dr G: do you know how bad and unprofessional it makes me look

Riley: Can we fucken start with the operation, i don't wanna fuck with you today.

Dr G: Fine! Just follow me.

We followed her with Riley holding my hand we got to a ward and he sat me on the bed.

Dr G: Dr kumar meet our Patient her name is Anny and this is her boyfriend Riley

Riley: Nice to meet you and sorry for being late.

Dr kumar: Shall we start?

Me: Ain't you going to do tests first?

Dr Kuma: there's no need Dr G has already given me your File i read through it.

Me: Okay.

The doctor explained how the operation is gonna be done they was to give me a general

anaesthesia instead of the local anaesthesia. Some of what he said i didn't hear because i was so scared what if the operation doesn't go well will i be blind forever?

I changed to the hospital gown and they gave me the anaesthesia and i was gone,Riley was there with me holding my hand. The operation was not that long it was about 3 hours. I regained consciousness after a while.

Riley: Welcome back

Me: Did it work? Am i able to see?

I touch my eyes but they were bandaged.

Dr kumar: we will have to see after 3 days if the operation was successful or not, please do not remove that bandage i don't want any infection in that Area.

That was a disappointment shame i thought that maybe the operation will work instantly. We drove back home i was feeling very down, what

if the operation doesn't work..... 3days came very fast i didn't want it to come i mean i was so negative about the whole operation what if i don't see,Tessa and everyone stayed supporting me telling me to be positive. We didn't go to the hospital we went to the surgery.

Dr kumar sat me down on the bed

Dr kumar: are you ready?

Me: I think so

He took of the bandage i put my hands on my eyes.

Dr kumar: Come now open your eyes.

Me: No what If it didn't work?

Dr Kumar: There's only one way to find out...

I shook my head no.

Riley: Come on snuggle bunny

Me: No I'm scared

Riley took my hands off my eyes and i closed

my eyes.

Riley: I'm standing in front of you i want to be the first person you see..

I opened my eyes, and tears followed

Riley: And?

Me: I can see..

Him: You can?

Me: Yes i can see you and you still look fine as hell.

He hugged me i was soo happy yes i can see my eye sight was not good yet it was still a bit blurry especially if i look at things from a distance range but all that mattered was that i can see..

[06/17, 18:48] Ron: PART 35 LOVE KNOWS NO COLOR

5months had passed i was biiig maybe that's

because I spend most of my time eating junk. Things between me and Riley were very good, less fights, there was peace in the house we were happy. Tessa and i we were very close she was like a mom I've never had, Jamie even Taught me how to drive, Riley had put his thuggish lifestyle aside to focus on me and the baby what he did to Mxova and Rogers even today i don't know he never told me. My nightmares of what Mxova put me through they come and go but i was adjusting to my normal life because of the strong support system i have which is my family. Jamie and i would talk once in a while and I'd see a psychologist once in a while too if i feel depressed. I woke up that morning it was a Monday i went to the bathroom to brush my teeth and went downstairs, Tessa was making breakfast. I never say No to Tessa's food she's one hell of a good cook.

Me: Morning Tessa

Her: Morning Darling how did you sleep?

Me: I didn't sleep much

Tessa: Why is that?

Me: Your grandchild can decide not to move the whole day and only start being active when we have to go to bed.

Tessa laughed.

Me: Don't laugh it's serious.

Tessa: I'm sorry darling but that goes to show that you have one strong baby.

I put my hand on my tummy and smiled.

Me: Yes i sure do.

Tessa: You going to have a baby girl.

Me: Why does everyone keep on saying that?

Tessa: look at you. You have a round tummy you glowing, your feet are too swollen they like an elephant's feet. You have chubby cheeks and this pregnancy has made you look very

beautiful.

Me: Ahhhhh that's sweet except for the elephant feet Ofcause.

She laughed a little.

Tessa: Would you like breakfast?

Me: Yes please, did you make my favourite?

Her: bacon?

Me: Yes..

I was obsessed with bacon and Biltong, i even put bacon on ice cream there's nothing i didn't eat without bacon.

Tessa: No, but there's fried chicken that was left for yesterday with macaroni and cheese, and there's also corn.

Me: I'll have that please.

Tessa: Coming right up.

Tessa was very beautiful now i knew were Gina and Riley got their good looks too, and she had

the most warmest and kindest smile ever, and the way me and her have gotten close this past few months is just amazing the love i had for this woman was just too much.

She brought me the plate of food with a glass of coke on the side.

Riley came in while i was about to start eating.

Riley: What are you doing?

Me: Eating

He came and took the plate away.

Me: What you do that for?

Her: the doctor said you must eat healthy

Me: I am eating healthy Macaroni and cheese is healthy.

Him: And is coke healthy?

Me: Well....

Riley: You gonna kill my baby with this unhealthy food

Me: The baby is still alive and we enjoy this unhealthy food.

He brought me cornflakes and juice.

Me: We won't get full here

Him: Anathi you need to start eating healthy for real, look at how big you are.

Me: Are you saying I'm fat?

Him:Yes!

Tessa: Riley! *shouting*

I stood up and walked upstairs with him following me.

Him: would you rather have me lie to you?

I was crying.

Me: You soo insensitive sometimes! I'm this fat because of you!

He came to me and put his hands around my waist.

Me: don't touch me right now.

Him: That came out wrong I'm sorry

I ignored him.

Him: i didn't mean it like that

Me: How did you mean it?

Him: uhm.. I meant it.. Actually it's uhm..

Me: You can't even explain yourself

Him: Okay I'm sorry i didn't mean to hurt your feelings and know that I'm still madly in love with you even though you fat.

Me: The Fat word again..

Him: Fuck! Sorry

Me: Fuck who?

Him: Not you, that wasn't meant for you. Anathi you should know that I'm not good with this romantic things, as long as you know that I love you and I'll always love you that's all that matters.

Me: Really you do?

Him: Yes and i want us to get married..

That's a bomb right here!

Me: Get married?

Him: Yes i think it's time now, I'm tired of busy referring to you as my girlfriend.

me: i hope you not playing with me

Him: I'm not we can even go shopping for a ring after your Appointment

Me: Omg is it today?

Him: You forgot?

Me: i totally forgot.

Him: Then you should go bath so i can take you.

Today was the day we gonna find out if it's a girl or a boy because we were tired of busy calling him/her "The baby"

I went to the bathroom and bathe, came back

wore leggings, and a long T-shirt with Gladiator sandals, my breasts were huge, the way i was so big it freaked me out that i might have hypertension, Riley was all starring at me while i was busy clothing.

Me: Yes I'm fat you can stop starring now.

Him: You sexy fat!

Me: Really?

Him: Yeap im even thinking that we might not make it to the doctor's office.

He came to kiss me.. My hormones were just acting up i was horny most of the time but Riley and i skipped on sex since I was violated he was scared that if we do it i might relive that moment again, even though i assured him that im fine he still wouldn't.

After he kissed me for like a minute he stopped and said we should leave, was this guy serious right now. I took my bag and we went

downstairs, i took a pack of Biltong before we left Riley just looked at me and said nothing. He bought a ranger rover evoque because i couldn't do this small sports cars of his. We drove to the gynaecologist's office, Riley got me a female gynae because he didn't want any man touching this man of mine was jealous. I laid on the bed she put on that gel and did the scan, all along Riley and Tessa were right it was a girl, Riley was soo happy busy saying "i told you"

And all that time I was just thinking that my poor baby girl is introuble with a father like this..

Doctor: You gonna have a healthy baby

That was good to hear.

Doctor: Is there anything else?

Me: Yes Doc please tell this man i need sex in my life.

Riley coughed and the nurse laughed

Me: I'm serious

Riley: i doubt that's a medical condition, you can't die from lack of sex

Me: You can never know.

Doctor: that's something you guys will have to talk about and reach an agreement , but just know that sex is safe during pregnancy.

Riley: Can we go because this conversation is making me uncomfortable.

Me: Maybe if you were giving it to me then i wouldn't be mentioning this.

Riley: So you decide to go and hang our laundry in public?

Me: Dr Robbin is not the public, she's my doctor..

Riley: Yeah whatever let's go.

I hugged Dr Robbin and we left, i really liked her she was a good doctor.

We got to The car and he drove, but we didn't

go home he took a different route

Me: Where we going?

Him: somewhere

Me: Somewhere where?

Him: You'll see.

He drove to centurion at Pretoria.

Me: Are we visiting someone?

Him: Nope

We drove up to this beautiful house, the gate opened automatically and we drove in.

Me: Wow that's a beautiful house, who lives here?

Him: Us

Me: Us?

Him: Yes i bought it for us.

We got out of the car.

Him: We a big family now so we need a bigger

house

Me: Wow I'm speechless right now.

Him: Let's go inside and check it out.

We went inside and it was already fully furnished

Me: When did you do all of this?

Him: I hooked up an interior deco who did everything, it's been a month now.

Me: You and your surprises!

Him: do you love it?

Yes i did love it the kitchen was pure white, lounge was black, white, and red. Me: Yes i do love it

Him: i have one last thing to show you.

He walked me to some room, when he opened the door i was shocked it was a beautiful pink and white nursery.

Me: This is beautiful

He hugged me from behind..

Me: What if it was a boy?

Him: Then we would've changed it.

He took me by my hand and Led me to the master bedroom

Him: And this is our bedroom, it's not done being renovated yet because i want the most expensive bed there is out there.

The room had a big flat screen on the ceiling, had a bathroom, it was Missing a bed and some furniture.

Riley can really surprise you.

Me: You'll give me a heart attack with all this surprises

Him: I'm sorry

Me: Thank you for the house though

Him: Anything for my snuggle bunny.

Me: Don't make me blush

He smiled..

Him: And I've heard you been telling the doctor that you need a dick in your life

Me: i think i do.

He turned me around and kissed me, I've been waiting for this for months now.

Me: We don't have a bed

Him: We'll use the carpet.

We continued kissing, and we went down

Him: This is gonna be hard since i can't get ontop of you.

Me: We'll have to try something else..

We kissed and kissed and kissed, he ran his hand on my thighs, then my breasts. He took off my t-shirt and we were interrupted by his phone ringing.

Him: Let's ignore it.

We ignored it but the person wasn't stopping,

that he decided to answer it, i don't know what the person said but his mood changed.

Him: We leaving

Me: to where?

Him: This ain't the time to ask questions.

He helped me get up and we quickly went to the car and drove home, he dropped me at home and went, i wonder what was happening. I know that when his like this vele there's nothing i can say.

Tessa: Were is he rushing too?

Me: I have no idea.

I went upstairs to rest a little but i couldn't rest how Riley took off was bothering me what could have happened. I got out of bed and went downstairs Tessa was not around i went and took my car keys and went to fetch my sisters from school, school was not out yet so i waited in the car. They came out at 14:00 and came to

my car, they got in and we went to spur to eat first before heading home. After having lunch we headed home,we got home and there was no sign of Tessa

Mbali: Where is Nanny? (Tessa)

Me: i don't know go take off your uniform.

They went upstairs, i tried calling Riley but his phone was on voice mail, i called Jamie her phone was also on voice mail. I took out a tub of ice cream sat down and ate. Tessa came back after a while with plastics.

Me: were you coming from?

Tessa: I went to get some veges, I'm starting with dinner now.

Me: let me help you.

Her: that would be nice thank you darling

I did the basics just cut the veges, Palesa and Mbali came down,Mbali ran to Tessa.

Mbali: Nanny..

Tessa picked her up..

Tessa: You getting heavy i won't be able to pick you up anymore

Palesa: Hello Nanny

Tessa: Hello darling how was school?

Palesa: Tiring can't wait to finish.

Tessa: You will finish.

Tessa and i cooked dinner while The girls did their homework then after we set the table...

Riley came back while we we were at the table eating he came with Jamie, and they joined us..

Me: Were you Been?

Riley: Somewhere handling business

Jamie: This food smells good who cooked?

Tessa: That would be me.

Jamie: You sure know your way around the

kitchen.

Tessa: Been cooking for many years

We had dinner Tessa cooked a nice meal we were talking and laughing but

Riley was quiet throughout the whole dinner service.

The door bell rang, Riley and Jamie looked at each other

Tessa: Whose that? At night

Tessa stoop up to go and open but Riley stopped her.

I was getting a bit scared.

The person rang the door bell, Riley told us to keep quiet. The person stopped ringing the door bell when we were sure that they were gone they started shooting at the door handle, mbali and Palesa screamed.

Riley: Tessa take the girls upstairs

Tessa took the girls upstairs.

Riley: That applied to you too Anathi

Me: I'm going nowhere we gonna die together

Jamie: Anathi this is no time to be stubborn.

Jamie tried to get me upstairs but i was refusing, the door was kicked and Brad and Jennifer got in holding guns and they looked very angry.

Riley: There's no need for this

Jen: There is a need for this! We have never broken the blood code and we not gonna start today..

Jamie: She's harmless

Brad: That doesn't matter what still stands Is the fact that she Knows everything.

Riley came and stood in front of Me

Riley: I'm not gonna let you kill her

Brad: You have no choice! You decided to get in

bed with her and then tell her about our crew
“The Bloods” so since she knows too much she
must go.

Jennifer: And we would like you to step aside
sniper we wanna do this the easy way!

Yoooh that was not easy to process, hearing that
you gonna die

Me: Please guys I’m not gonna tell anyone
about your business.

Riley: Keep quiet Anathi!

Brad pointed his gun at us

Brad: You know i won’t miss, I’m not called “The
spitting cobra” for nothing! I can spit from a
long distance and kill a motherf*****

Riley: Jamie go get my sniper!

Jamie ran upstairs

Brad: You really gonna do this Riley?

Riley: Yes because you busy acting like a

female right now, you on some Vagina shit!

How can Riley say that to someone who has a gun right now!

Brad: I'd rather be a Vagina than to be a traitor

Jennifer: You really gonna do this with us Riley?
Your own crew? For a mere bitch!

Riley: he started it now let's see if a spitting cobra can match up to a sniper!

I saw Brad fueling up with more anger, he cocked his gun.

We really gonna die here..

Save

Rate (34 Ratings)

[06/17, 18:50] Ron: PART 36 LOVE KNOWS NO COLOR

This was just getting out of hand Jamie came with the Sniper , i couldn't let this happen.

Me: can i speak?

Riley: Anathi I'm handling this!

Me: guys Please just hear me out.

They all looked at me.

Me: i don't know how you guys met and how this crew started but what i know is that you guys come far, very far. This crew is not gonna breakup because of me.

Brad: You right about that

Me: I have a solution or a suggestion a better one, because if you guys kill me Riley will retaliate and it's just gonna be worse.

Jen: Get to the point!

Me: How about i join the crew, i mean if i join then there won't be no killing each other plus you guys need a partner since Gina is gone.

Riley: What?

Jennifer: You joking right?

Me: Just think about it.

Riley: You not joining The Bloods Anathi! Over my dead body.

Me: Riley j...

Riley: No Anathi!

Eyy i have a stubborn Nigga shame.

Jennifer: i say we kill her and get this thing over and done with!

Jamie: There won't be any killing Jennifer! At least not tonight!

Everyone was just getting angry.

Jennifer: Why don't you just shut up Jamie I'm not talking to you!

Jamie: Who you..

Brad: Can everyone calm the fuck down!

We all kept quiet.

Brad: I hate to say this but she's right.

Jennifer: She's what?

Brad: think about it if she joins will actually be complete and there's no blood that needs to be spilt.

Jennifer: How can we trust her?

Me: Jennifer I'm sure when you joined the crew you needed them to trust you, same way that I need to be trusted too.

Brad: so what do you guys say?

Jamie: I Approve

Jennifer: I don't know if..

Brad: Jen..

She looked at me for a while.

Jennifer: I Approve

Brad: I Also Approve

Now everyone looked at Riley who was angry, no i mean very angry his face was even red.

Brad: Riley?

Riley: over my dead body! I'm not gonna have my woman join the Bloods you know how dangerous this life is!

Brad: we all knew how dangerous it was when we joined and we still here!

Riley: You guys seem to forget that i started this crew! I run the Bloods! So don't fucken come to me with ultimatums!

Jennifer: but that's the only option we have, or unless you want us to put a bullet in her head.

Riley: i want yall to get the fuck out of my house! before i fucken shoot somebody!

Brad: We not done talking

Riley: Don't make me repeat myself.

Jennifer: we give you only tonight to decide.

They walked out.

Riley: That goes to you too Jamie!

Jamie didn't protest or complain she went out,he looked at me with eyes full of anger.

Riley: i told you that I'm never gonna lay my hand on you and I'm not gonna start now. I'm very angry Anathi you've made me very angry..

Me: I'm just try..

Riley: I'm not done talking!

I kept quiet.

Him: What you gonna do right now is fucken March your pregnant ass upstairs and don't fucken come down because if you do i won't be responsible for what I'm gonna do to you!

My stubbornness won't work in this situation, i went upstairs when i was close to my bedroom

i heard shots being fired, things breaking and Riley busy swearing, i was soo scared i thought that i was gonna go into early labour. The way i was soo scared and paranoid i went to Tessa's room and knocked she opened and hugged me

Tessa: My poor baby you look so scared what's wrong? You even shaking.

Me: It's.. It's Riley.

The girls came out of their room all looking scared and crying. Tessa picked Mbali up and we went inside her bedroom.

Tessa: we all gonna sleep in here.

Yazi this was not normal, is Riley a human being or what mara?

Me: Tessa what's wrong with your son?

Tessa: i don't know my dear, i never raised him up i really don't know why his like this.

Palesa and i slept on the bed while Mbali and Tessa slept on the floor. I couldn't sleep my

baby was not kicking, she usually kicks at night, i was thinking about how did i fall in love with such a beast! And what's more messed up is that i love him soo much!

My phone vibrated at around 2am, i checked and it was a message from Riley saying "Come to the bedroom we need to talk"

I don't know if i should go or shouldn't go, what if i don't go and he comes here and stars a serious war i don't want my sisters getting hurt.

I got out of bed and went out of the bedroom to my bedroom, he was sitting on the bed with a whiskey bottle in his hand and he was playing music, he was playing hip hop and a specific song Love me (good kush and alcohol)_lil wayne ft drake & future. I stood at the door scared to go to him.

Him: Lock the door.

I can't lock the door what if he kills me.

Him: i said lock the door Anathi!

He was serious i didn't wanna piss him more
Off i locked.

Him: You seriously wanna join The Bloods?

Me: Yes

Him: Come here..

I hesitated

Him: i told you that I'll never hit you and i am a
man of my word.

I slowly went him, and he sat me on top of him
while facing him.

He unbuttoned my shirt, and started kissing me,
while running his hands up and down my
breasts, i could taste the whisky in his mouth
and that turned me on.

He took off my shirt and i took off his, i helped
him take off my Pj pants while still kissing like
that. He took the remote next to him and turned

up the volume, when we were done undressing he entered me from that position i was not even wet,it was a bit painful, who was i kidding it was very painful. it was even hard for him to enter me because i was still tight, when he was finally in tears were at the verge of falling.

He looked deep into my eyes, i looked away he turned my face to look at him, and he was squeezing my cheeks.

Him: I see tears.

I couldn't answer because he was squeezing my cheeks hard.

Him: I'm giving you a taste of how The Bloods is.

He took his hand off my cheeks and started pumping me hard while he moved me up and down, it was amazing how much strength he has. I was crying, and he was pulling my hair, i don't know where he gets all this aggressiveness, the pain started seizing and i was feeling pleasure i was biting his lower lip

with my eyes closed and i think he was also enjoying because he was moaning. After a few minutes he was done and i got off. We went to shower and had one last round there. When we were done we dried ourselves and put on lotion, went to bed and i slept on his chest. I loved this insane weird relationship we have, i love this beast of mine, i don't know what people say i love him!

Him: i love you.

Me: i love you too

Him: Sorry if i hurt you

Me: It's okay because I ended up enjoying.

Him: You sure you wanna join The Bloods?

Me: i don't have a choice if i don't they will kill me, and our baby

Him: This is what i was afraid off, i didn't want you to join my crew it's too dangerous.

Me: I'll be okay i am stronger than you think.

He kissed me on my forehead and we passed out while still talking...i was woken up in the morning by my baby who was kicking Me like there's no tomorrow, Riley wasn't next to me.

When i was about to get off bed he came with a tray of food.

Him:Good morning

Me: Morning

Him: I've brought you breakfast.

Me: hope its not oats or cornflakes

Him: No its your favourite actually.

He put the tray next to me and i got up and went to brush my teeth then came back to eat, was bacon, sausages, sliced tomatoes, toasted bread and an Apple juice.

Me: Smells good thank you

Him: You welcome

He leaned and kissed my tummy

Him: And how is my princess?

Me: She's good just kicking alot..

Him: That's my baby girl

I ate my breakfast went to bath then Riley said the crew will be here to pick us up,there's things i needed to know about the bloods. We went downstairs to wait for them and the kitchen was a mess, things were broken, there was even alot of broken glasses on the floor, and bullet holes almost everywhere, i gave him a serious look.

Him: Sorry i just lost control last night,I've already called someone to come and clean.

We went out to wait for the crew and they showed up with a big black SUV we went in and no one said a word. We went to some warehouse it was far from houses and the main roads, we went in and Jamie turned on the light.

Brad: We gonna tell you a bit about the bloods.

I sat down.

Riley: i started the crew back in 2009 and recruited only the best. Brad, Jen, Jamie, and the late Gina. Brad is called "The spitting cobra" because his the best shooter he never misses no matter how long the distance is. Jennifer is called "The dynamite" because she can bomb an ATM without a bomb!, Jamie is called "The Razor" because we have Razor discs that are very sharp if they throw it at you it will cut you. There's a special technique that's used to throw the Razor disc because if you just throw it anyhow it will come back and cut you. We all tried but we weren't able to get it right only Jamie can. The late Gina was called "The Sweet-Angel" because she has a signature move were she leaves a lollipop behind after doing a heist. I am called "The Sniper" because ain't no one who can be good with a sniper like me. We wear black, white, and red. That's our only colours and none more. We always wear a red bandana

around our necks and a black bandana around our wrists. The black Bandana represents loyalty that you will die a blood and the red bandana represents blood of the enemies that we killed

Jamie: We don't kill unless we have no choice.

Jennifer: We strictly deal with Bank robberies

Brad: we've robbed around 20 banks, and everyone has a safe here were we store our cash, because it's too risky to keep our cash at the bank.

They showed me the safes and Yaa this people are rich!

Brad: Since you pregnant you can't do the training so we gonna postpone it until you give birth.

They gave me the Bandanas of honor.

Brad: if you betray us we will kill you!

Jennifer: Welcome to the bloods

Jamie: Welcome to the bloods

Brad: Welcome to the bloods

Riley: And as the leader of the bloods i welcome you to the bloods.

Me: Thank you

It was such an honor to be a member of this powerful crew.

Brad: And ohh we have a lot of enemies so always be careful.

Jamie: once we see what kind of skill you have then we'll give you a name.

Riley: Meeting adjourned bloods.

They all did some gangster signs i joined in too,i didn't even know what they meant.

Jamie: We should go celebrate tonight to welcome our new member.

Brad: That would work will meet each other at our usual place at 22:00pm. We all drove back

they dropped me at the house they said they had some errands to run. I went inside the house the kitchen was still like that shame poor Tessa was trying to clean, i told her that im gonna help her i just need to put my bag upstairs, Riley's phone was on the bed ringing but when i went to answer it stopped, i checked who was calling and i saw 12 missed calls from Dr G, that was weird, i sat down and thought of going Through his phone but i thought that i probably shouldn't. I put it back on the bed again and started walking to the door, i stopped and went back to take it i mean what the hack! I'm sure he has nothing to hide. I went through his messages there was nothing interesting just messages from his crew, especially Jamie, i checked other places until i got to his pics and there was one pic that got my attention it was him, Dr G and a baby, it was a new born baby because the pic was taken at the hospital Dr G had just given birth and Riley was leaning over

and kissing her while she was laying in the hospital bed with the baby in her arms, i dropped the phone on the floor! I was stunted,with my eyes wide open.

Save

Rate (34 Ratings)

[06/17, 19:11] Ron: PART 37 LOVE KNOWS NO COLOR

My anger was on point, i wanted answers i need answers! And there's only one person whom I'm gonna get those answers from and That Is G. I took my keys and went to my car, got in and drove like a mad person to Dr G's office. I

arrived there and went to her receptionist.

Me: Is G in?

Her: Yes but she's..

I started walking to her office.

Receptionist: Mam you can't walk in there.

I pushed her door open and she was on her phone.

Dr G: Can i call you back, okay bye. You cannot just budge into my office like that!

Me: i can budge into your office whenever i want too

Dr G: What can i do for you?

Me: do you have a baby with Riley?

Dr G: Excuse me?

Me: no I'm not gonna excuse you!

Her: isn't that something you should be discussing with Riley?

Me: I'm discussing it with you!

Dr G: i have a lot of work to do so please leave.

Me: i am not going anywhere!

She stood up and tried to walk away i grabbed her by her hair.

Me: don't fucken piss me off!

Her: Let go of my hair before i call security!

I let go of her hair and pushed her she almost fell.

Her: Yes! We have a son! His name is Blake and his 3 years old.

I grabbed a chair and sat down.

Her: i shouldn't even be a threat to you! I'm happily married my husband is a better father to Blake than Riley could ever be! Riley hasn't seen his son in 2 years!

I was sitting there trying to process what G was telling me.

Dr G: Since you now know the truth can you please leave!

I stood up and left, went to my car and drove around till i made it to some bar, i went in and called Diamond to come, she came after an hour or so and i was drinking ciders.

Diamond: Hey pumpkin it's nice to see you..

I stood up and hugged her.

Her: You pregnant! Wow We have a lot to talk about.

Me: yes we do.

Diamond: Hey you shouldn't be drinking while you pregnant.

She took the cider away.

Me: i really need this drink Diamond

Diamond: Okay what's wrong?

Me: Nothing is wrong

Diamond: i ain't buying that, so out with it.

Me: ever since I started dating Riley my life has been a mess.

Diamond: Why you say that?

Me: too much unnecessary shit happening, you know i just found out that he has a child with my eye doctor.

Diamond: Really?

Me: Yes the baby is 3 or 4.

Diamond: yall weren't dating at that time were you?

Me: No, but that's not the point!

Diamond: what's the point?

Me: the point is he lied to me, if i didn't see the picture on his phone he was not gonna tell me!

Diamond: Ohh goodness me, you went through his phone?

Me: Yes i did!

Diamond: You never go through your nigga's

phone ever!

Me: Fuck that if I suspect something I'm gonna go through his phone!

Diamond: that's why you here then trying to harm your baby.

Me: I called you here so that we can have fun not for you to judge me.

Her: Okay fine but you drinking something else not alcohol.

Me: whatever!

Diamond and i chilled there drinking, she was getting drunk so i decided to drink alcohol without her noticing,we chilled until late then we left i drove her home, i wasn't drunk i was just tipsy,after dropping her at her flat i drove home i arrived there at 23:30 Riley was at the kitchen waiting for me.

Me: Hi...

I was finding it hard to stand still i was

stumbling.

Riley: Where the fuck have you been? I've been calling you!

Me: out!

Him: Are you drunk?

Me: Maybe.

He came closer I walked backwards.

Him: Are you trying to kill my baby Anathi?

Me: I'm not you are!

Riley: I'm not the one drinking while pregnant.

Me: because you drove me to the bottle

Him: What?

Me: Why didn't you tell me about Blake.

Him: How did you find out about Blake?

Me: i went through your phone!

Him: You went through my phone?

Me: Yes!

Him: Have you seen me going through your phone?

I kept quiet.

Him: So just because i didn't tell you about Blake you decided to go and drink?

Me: if i didn't go through your phone and saw that pic was you even gonna tell me about Blake?

Him: No! Because his not important to us!

His phone rang and he walked away to answer. How can he say his son is not important! He came back looking all pissed.

Him: You went to G's office?

Me: ohh she called you to snitch!

Riley: sometimes I don't understand you at all.

Me: Why do you wanna understand me? I'm not a textbook

Riley: Don't talk to me like that!

Me: Or what?

He looked down and smiled a lil then looked at me with a deadly stare and slapped me. I was shocked i mean what happened to I'll never hit you, i put my hand on my cheek and looked at him in disbelief.

Him: Anathi I'm...

I didn't wait for him to finish i went upstairs to our bedroom and locked the door sat on the bed and cried, he was busy Knocking i didn't wanna talk to him or see him.

I took my phone out and called Jamie.

Jamie: Hello

Me: Hey Jamie can you come and fetch me.

Jamie: Fetch you?

Me: Yes i can't be in this house right now!

Jamie: What happened?

I started crying.

Jamie: Anny?

Me: Riley beat me up!

Jamie: he what?

Me: Please come and fetch me

Her: Okay I'm coming.

I hung up and started packing then waited for Jamie, i heard her voice coming upstairs after a while she was arguing with Riley, she knocked..

Jamie: Anny it's me open

I opened Riley was there with her.

Me: Please help me with my bag.

She got my bag.

Riley: You moving out because i slapped you?

Me: You a woman beater i don't trust you anymore today it can be a slap and tomorrow you'll be shooting me.

Riley: You provoked me!

Me: Jamie please let's go.

Jamie got my bag and we left with Riley looking at me he didn't even try to stop me. We got to Jamie's jeep and i just cried my eyes out. Jamie put her hand around my shoulders

Jamie: I'm sorry Anny, Riley can be something else sometimes but i never thought he could actually hit you.

Me: It's not that he hit me, what gets to me is that all of this is happening because of Dr G

Jamie: What does Dr G have to do with all of this?

Me: i found out about Blake.

Jamie looked down.

Me: You also knew?

Jamie: Yes but Blake is not important

Me: Why does everyone say that! Ofcause he is

important he is Riley's son!

Jamie: biological yes, but his being raised by another man Dr G made sure that Riley doesn't have any contact with his son.

Me: Why would G do that?

Jamie : because she didn't want her son growing up knowing that his father is a thug.

Me: so Riley gave up.

Jamie: There was nothing he could do even if he tried to fight for custody the court was gonna be in G's favour.

Me: What was Riley doing with G in the first place she looks old

Jamie: Riley saved her from self destruction. She was doing drugs, prostitution, etc they met at a strip club.

Me: G looks Old

Jamie: She's 35

Me: Riley is 26

Jamie: There was no real relationship between them, just that Riley saved her from that life and put her through school.

Me: Riley the life saver! *sarcasm*

We got to Jamie's house, it was a beautiful small house.

Me: Where's your mom?

Jamie: Night shift she's a nurse.

We went to her room and it looked boyish.

Jamie: You can sleep here I'll take the couch.

Me: can you sleep here I'm scared of sleeping alone after what happened

Her: No problem.

She got her aerospace mattress and put it next to the bed.

I went to bath before sleeping and brushed my teeth then went to bed and slept..... I woke up

in the morning Jamie was already up and combing her hair, she had that Justin beiber/miley cyrus hairstyle.

Her: Good morning

Me: Hey.

Her: Go brush your teeth I'll make you breakfast.

I went and brushed my teeth then we went to the kitchen.

Jamie: What would you like to have?

Me: bacon, toasted bread and sausages.

Her: Coming right up.

Me: You'll have to drive me to my pregnancy classes

Her: Today?

Me: Yes you have plans?

Her: Not really what time do they start?

Me: 10am.

Jamie's phone rang she answered and put it on loud speaker.

Jamie: Sniper

Riley: Yow Jamie.

Jamie: What can i do for you?

Riley: i Need to see you today man wanna discuss something with you

Her: Ayt I'll see you in the afternoon

Riley: My place

Jamie: Ayt cool man

Riley: cool

He hung up.

Me: He didn't even ask about me

Jamie: Give him time

Me: time for what? He should be apologising and begging me to come home and yena his acting like I'm the one who did him wrong!

Jamie: Riley has his own time of doing things.

It was painful what Riley was doing to me.

The door opened and a woman wearing a nurse uniform came in.

Her: Good morning

Jamie: Hey mom.

She stopped and looked at me..

Jamie: Mom this is Anny she's dating Riley and they having some problems so she will be staying with us..

Her: Anny?

Jamie: Yes her sisters lived here remember

Her: Ohhh Anny, So you are Anny.

She came to hug me

Her: It's nice to finally meet you

Me: It's nice to meet you too..

Her: Wow you even have a bump

congratulations

Me: Thank you.

Her: How far long are you?.

Me: 5 months going on 6 months.

Her: that's nice I'm sure Riley is happy.

I didn't answer.

Her: is everything okay dear?

I started crying and shook my head no, she came and hugged me.

Her: what's wrong?

Me: Riley is not doing me good..

Her: i Know Riley his too difficult but give him some time he will come around.

Jamie: That's what i told her.

Me: It's not fair what his doing to me he causes me too much stress it's like he doesn't even care about his unborn baby and what this stress

is doing to us.

Her: i can try and talk to him

Me: Please do..

Her: I will, now stop crying and let me make you something to eat

Jamie: I'm handling that mom you can go and sleep I'm sure you tired.

Her: What do you know about cooking Jamie?

Jamie: I'm trying

Her: step away from the stove before you burn us.

Jamie took her car keys and said she's going to the car wash she will come back and pick me up.

Her mom made me breakfast then she went and slept. I ate then went to bath and dressed up i checked my phone still no missed calls from Riley. Jamie came back to fetch me and

we went to the pregnancy classes did a few exercises some women where there with their husbands i wished that Riley was here with me. The classes were 2 hours after that Jamie and i went out for lunch then she drove me home and went to meet up with Riley. I got home and i slept Because there was nothing to do. I woke up later and went to the kitchen it was around 17:00 Jamie's mother was preparing supper i helped her. After cooking we set the table and waited for Jamie. We tried calling her but her phone was off.

Jamie's mom: It's 20:00 let's eat i don't think she will come.

We ate it was a nice meal then after washed dishes,the house phone started ringing Jamie's mom went to answer while i was still washing dishes, she came back with tears in her eyes after 10min

She sat down..

Me: What's wrong?

Her: I just got a call from Jennifer she's saying that..

Me: saying what?

Her: Riley and Jamie were.. They..

I was getting scared.

Me: They did what?

Her: They were driving in Riley's car then a certain car bumped into their car and pushed them off the road, Riley's car rolled 3 times then after it caught fire.

Me: Ohh My Word are they okay?

Her: Jamie broke her leg and shattered her pelvis

Me: And Riley, what about Riley?

She shook her head with tears in her eyes

Her: I'm sorry Anny..

I dropped the dish that i was carrying and held on to the sink because i felt like i was going to collapse,what happened to my Riley.

Save

Rate (32 Ratings)

[06/17, 19:11] Ron: PART 38 LOVE KNOWS NO COLOR

I was breathing fast, i felt like i was gonna go to labour,Riley can't be dead now.

Me: Riley cannot die, not like this not now.

Jamie's mom: What? No his not dead, his in ICU.

That wasn't much of a relief.

Me: Can we go see them.

Her: Let's go.

She helped me walk out of the door.

Him: Are you okay?

Me: I'll be fine

We got to her corsa and drove to the hospital, i couldn't wait to see him. We got to The hospital and walked to the reception.

When we were about to enquire Jamie came to us in a wheelchair some nurse was pushing her. We hugged her.

Me: Jamie what happened?

Jamie: i think you need to sit down for this.

I went and sat.

Jamie: Mom can you please give us some privacy for a few minutes.

Jamie's mom: I'll go and pray.

The hospital had some room where you can go and pray for your loved ones.

Me: How did this happen Jamie?

As we were talking Brad and Jennifer came in, they came up to us and hugged us then sat down.

Jamie: guys this was no accident someone had it in for The Sniper

Me: What do you mean?

Jamie: We were driving then a black car pushed us off the road, Riley lost control and the car rolled 3 times, we got out before the car caught fire, i was badly hurt my pelvis was shattered and my leg was broken, Riley was not that hurt so he came to my side of the car to drag me out of the car. After he dragged me out someone came with a gun from the car that pushed us off the road and shot Riley like 5times.

Jennifer: Ohh my God.

Brad: Did you see the person?

Jamie: No they had a mask on.

Me: so they wanted Riley dead

Jamie: Yes and i couldn't help him.

Jamie was already tearing up.

Jamie: I couldn't save him if only i had my gun i could've done something.

Me: Don't blame yourself Jamie, it's not your fault.

Jennifer: we must find this bastard! We must find whoever did this and make them pay!

Jamie: We shouldn't let this go and Anny i think you need full protection because it seems like this person has a personal vendetta.

Me: Omg my sisters,excuse me.

I went outside to call Tessa.

Tessa: Anny

Me: Hey Tessa are you guys Alright?

Tessa: Yes we are okay were are you? When are you coming back home

Me: Im at the hospital.

Her: What's wrong? Are you okay? Is the baby okay?

Me: We are fine, it's Riley his in ICU

She let out a cry.

Tessa: What happened? Seems like I'm gonna lose all my children

Me: Someone shot him, we suspect that whoever did this might have a personal vendetta against us.

Tessa: i knew that it was only a matter of time until this happen

Me: What are you talking about?

Tessa: It's Jack who did this, he must've known that im here and now he wants to make me

suffer by killing my children.

Jack could be our first suspect, but I doubt

Me: Look Tessa lock all the doors make sure the alarm is always on.

I hung up and went back to the crew.

Me: Tessa thinks that it's Jack

Brad: Why would Jack wanna kill Riley?

Me: He must've heard that Riley brought Tessa into the country

Jennifer: it doesn't make sense, why not go for Riley and not Tessa straight.

Me: You can never understand how that man does things.

Jamie: We should look into Jack.

Brad: We on it, we going to his place right now.

They hugged us and Left.

Jamie: You need to get Tessa and the girls yall

can move in with my mom, you need to stay together.

Me: I'll fetch them, i wanna see Riley can you take me to his ward.

Her: Sure

I pushed her as she directed me, there were 3 guards outside his ward.

Jamie: They gonna make sure that whoever did this doesn't come back to finish him off.

Me: Thank you.

Jamie: You can go I'll be here.

I slowly went in, he was laying there with all those machines helping him to breath,he had bandages wrapped around his chest.

The doctor came while i was still standing there looking at him.

Doctor: Excuse me you not supposed to be here who are you?

Me: I'm his wife

Doctor: Ohw sorry

Me: is he gonna make it?

Doctor: We hoping that his gonna make it, he was shot 5 times on his chest I'm even surprised that his Still alive. We spent hours removing those bullets and he bled alot if he makes it another day then his lucky.

Me: isn't there anything else that you can do?

Doctor: No it all depends on him right now, he has to snap out of this on his own.

There's nothing more sad like a doctor telling you that there's nothing they can do.

Doctor: You can try talking him.

Me: Will he able to hear me?

Doctor: Yes this might sound crazy but i always have my own theory of people who are in ICU, please sit down.

I took a chair and sat down.

Doctor: i tend to think that his in a near-death experience.

Me: can you explain further

Doctor: it is an unusual experience taking place on the brink of death and recounted by a person on recovery, typically an out-of-body experience or a vision of a tunnel of light, Right now he is between life and death.

Me: That sounds not promising

Doctor: people who are in a near-death experience can hear and some can see what's happening around them, if you talk to him he will hear you and that might make him come back.

Me: You think so?

Him: Yes but that's my theory, although other people don't believe In it.

He looked at his wrist watch

Him: i have to go.

Me: Okay thank you Doctor.

The doctor left.

Was the doctor right? If i talk to him would he come back?

I took his hand.

Me: Hey its me, can you hear me?

He was laying still not moving,not even a twitch.

Me: i know that you and i had a fight before all of this happened, I'm sorry i don't know what got into me, maybe if i was there maybe you wasn't gonna get in that car with Jamie maybe i could've stopped you somehow. Riley if you can hear me Please come back to us we need you, me Tessa and the girls we need you.

I put his hand on my tummy.

Me: and our baby needs you.

I sat there for hours crying, until Jamie and her

mother came in.

Jamie: Anny.

I wiped my tears.

Jamie's mom: we have to go

Me: i can't leave him

Jamie: You not leaving him, you have to go fetch Tessa and the girls you'll come back tomorrow and I'll be here so long I'll call you if there's any changes.

Me: What time is it?

Jamie: 01:00

I stood up and kissed him on his forehead then Jamie's mom and i walked out. We got to her car and drove to the Penthouse to get the girls, Tessa opened the door for us and hugged me i cried on her shoulder and so did she, Jamie's mom was at the verge of crying too.

Tessa: How is he?

Me: His in a very critical state.

Tessa: i have been praying he has to be fine.

Jamie's mom: I've been praying too.

Me: Tessa this is..

Jamie's mom: Joy

Me: and Joy this is Tessa Riley's mother.

Joy: It's nice to meet you.

Tessa: It's a pleasure to meet you too.

Me: we have to go we'll be staying with Joy for a while where are the girls?

Tessa: they sleeping, and Joy thank you for opening your home to us

Joy: You welcome.

We walked upstairs to get the girls they were sleeping,i woke them up while Tessa and Joy packed their clothes.

Palesa: what's happening?

Me: We moving in with Joy again

Palesa: Why?

Me: Uncle Riley got shot his in hospital so whoever shot him might come after us.

Palesa: What? How is he?

Me: His in ICU

Palesa put her hands on her eyes

Palesa: He can't die, his the closest person i have to a father

Tessa came to hug her

Tessa: he won't die my angel.

Palesa was crying, mbali didn't know what was happening she was half asleep.

I also went and packed my clothes then we all went to the cars. Joy drove with the girls, and i drove with Tessa.

We got home and there were security guards at the gate, Jennifer and Brad organized them for

us. Joy slept with the girls and i slept with Tessa. Tessa and i prayed for long hours before sleeping.....time passed with Riley still In ICU it was now a month, Jamie was back at home and recovering, i was always at the hospital, Jennifer and Brad found nothing on Jack but they kept a close eye on him. I woke up in the morning was a Monday bathe and ate breakfast, Jamie came to the kitchen he wasn't on a wheelchair anymore she was walking with crutches.

Her: Morning

Me: Hey

Her: How are you?

Me: I'm hanging in there

Her: What are your plans for today?

Me: hospital and hospital

you?

Her: the crew and i we meeting later today we

still gonna hunt down whoever did this.

Me: why don't you let Brad and Jennifer handle it you still have to recover

Jamie: They doing slow it's been a month now

Me: is there anything else you know about the shooter can you recognise their voice? What were they wearing?

Jamie: The person didn't say a word but they were wearing all black

Me: i wonder who it is.

Jamie: whoever they are I'll find them.

I finished eating kissed Jamie on the cheek and walked out to my car. I first drove to see my Dr, Dr Robbin. I got there and she did a checkup the baby was fine i was now 6 months pregnant, my baby is strong it's amazing that she's still alive after all this stress I've been under. When i was done at Dr Robbin's surgery i drove straight to the hospital. The guards were still there and

Riley was still in ICU, not moving not even a sign that his gonna get better. I was due to give birth in 4 months time and i wanted him to see his daughter to actually be there when I'm giving birth. I held his hand and talked to him as always told him that im 6 months pregnant now and that i need him to come back. I usually visit him from 10am-20:00 the nurses and doctors knew me by now. Today i left at 22:00 instead of 20:00,i walked to the basement parking and there weren't alot of cars. I walked up to my car and my door was slightly open, that was weird because i locked it then i felt a gun on my head.

Voice: If you scream I'll kill you,now turn around slowly.

I turned around and it was the same person that Jamie said shot Riley, the person was wearing all black and a mask.

Me: Who are you and what do you want from us?

Person: How is Riley?

Me: His in ICU

Person: i thought he be dead by now.

The person's voice was a bit scratchy and their breathing was weird it was as if like they had a whooping cough because their chest made a sound when they were breathing, and sounded like they struggling to breath

Me: Who are you and what do you want from us?

Her: Revenge

Me: What Revenge?

Then i heard Jack's voice and he showed up behind the car

Jack: Revenge of what Riley did!

Me: i shouldve known it's you

Him: He brought Tessa into S.A and thought i wouldn't find out.

I kept quiet.

Him: And you, you the one who had a big mouth

and told him about his mother and i told you not to say anything! Now look you have put a lot of your loved ones in danger! I'm gonna kill all of you one by one starting with you then your sisters!

Me: Stay away from my sisters!

Him: if i don't you'll do what? Riley betrayed me all along he was a blood his a thug and he never told me! I hope he doesn't make it out of that coma.

He put his hand on the shooter's shoulder

Jack: Make sure this one dies darling she shouldn't even make it to ICU

Then he started walking away, i wish someone could kill this man already!

I saw that the person had the black bandana wrapped on their wrist, who is betraying the bloods like this?

Me: You a blood?

Person: Was.

Me: Who are you? Are you Jennifer?

Person: No

Me: Brad?

Person: No

Me: Jamie?

Person: No.

Me: Then who are you?

Person: There's one person you haven't mentioned

Who was the other blood? Can it be? No it can't be Gina she's dead!

Me: Gina?

She took off her mask

Gina: Hello Anny.

Me: No this can't be happening you dead! I saw you laying there lifeless!

She had a small pipe thing on her throat that helped her breath.

Her: that's what we wanted everyone to think

Me: but why Gina? Why would you betray the bloods like this? And why would you wanna kill your own brother!

for Jack?

Gina: Soo many questions and no answers!

I wonder what was Gina's motive and why did she make an alliance with Jack!

Save

Rate (30 Ratings)

[06/17, 19:11] Ron: PART 39 LOVE KNOWS NO COLOR

I was breathing fast, i felt like i was gonna go to labour,Riley can't be dead now.

Me: Riley cannot die, not like this not now.

Jamie's mom: What? No his not dead, his in ICU.

That wasn't much of a relief.

Me: Can we go see them.

Her: Let's go.

She helped me walk out of the door.

Him: Are you okay?

Me: I'll be fine

We got to her corsa an drove to the hospital, i couldn't wait to see him. We got to The hospital and walked to the reception.

When we were about to enquire Jamie came to us in a wheelchair some nurse was pushing her. We hugged her.

Me: Jamie what happened?

Jamie: i think you need to sit down for this.

I went and sat.

Jamie: Mom can you please give us some privacy for a few minutes.

Jamie's mom: I'll go and pray.

The hospital had some room where you can go and pray for your loved ones.

Me: How did this happen Jamie?

As we were talking Brad and Jennifer came in, they came up to us and hugged us then sat down.

Jamie: guys this was no accident someone had it in for The Sniper

Me: What do you mean?

Jamie: We were driving then a black car pushed us off the road, Riley lost control and the car rolled 3 times, we got out before the car caught fire, i was badly hurt my pelvis was shattered

and my leg was broken, Riley was not that hurt so he came to my side of the car to drag me out of the car. After he dragged me out someone came with a gun from the car that pushed us off the road and shot Riley like 5times.

Jennifer: Ohh my God.

Brad: Did you see the person?

Jamie: No they had a mask on.

Me: so they wanted Riley dead

Jamie: Yes and i couldn't help him.

Jamie was already tearing up.

Jamie: I couldn't save him if only i had my gun i could've done something.

Me: Don't blame yourself Jamie, it's not your fault.

Jennifer: we must find this bastard! We must find whoever did this and make them pay!

Jamie: We shouldn't let this go and Anny i think

you need full protection because it seems like this person has a personal vendetta.

Me: Omg my sisters, excuse me.

I went outside to call Tessa.

Tessa: Anny

Me: Hey Tessa are you guys Alright?

Tessa: Yes we are okay were are you? When are you coming back home

Me: Im at the hospital.

Her: What's wrong? Are you okay? Is the baby okay?

Me: We are fine, it's Riley his in ICU

She let out a cry.

Tessa: What happened? Seems like I'm gonna lose all my children

Me: Someone shot him, we suspect that whoever did this might have a personal vendetta against us.

Tessa: i knew that it was only a matter of time until this happen

Me: What are you talking about?

Tessa: It's Jack who did this, he must've known that im here and now he wants to make me suffer by killing my children.

Jack could be our first suspect, but i doubt

Me: Look Tessa lock all the doors make sure the alarm is always on.

I hung up and went back to the crew.

Me: Tessa thinks that it's Jack

Brad: Why would Jack wanna kill Riley?

Me: He must've heard that Riley brought Tessa into the country

Jennifer: it doesn't make sense, why not go for Riley and not Tessa straight.

Me: You can never understand how that man does things.

Jamie: We should look into Jack.

Brad: We on it, we going to his place right now.

They hugged us and Left.

Jamie: You need to get Tessa and the girls yall can move in with my mom, you need to stay together.

Me: I'll fetch them, i wanna see Riley can you take me to his ward.

Her: Sure

I pushed her as she directed me, there were 3 guards outside his ward.

Jamie: They gonna make sure that whoever did this doesn't come back to finish him off.

Me: Thank you.

Jamie: You can go I'll be here.

I slowly went in, he was laying there with all those machines helping him to breath,he had bandages wrapped around his chest.

The doctor came while i was still standing there looking at him.

Doctor: Excuse me you not supposed to be here who are you?

Me: I'm his wife

Doctor: Ohw sorry

Me: is he gonna make it?

Doctor: We hoping that his gonna make it, he was shot 5 times on his chest I'm even surprised that his Still alive. We spent hours removing those bullets and he bled alot if he makes it another day then his lucky.

Me: isn't there anything else that you can do?

Doctor: No it all depends on him right now, he has to snap out of this on his own.

There's nothing more sad like a doctor telling you that there's nothing they can do.

Doctor: You can try talking him.

Me: Will he be able to hear me?

Doctor: Yes this might sound crazy but I always have my own theory of people who are in ICU, please sit down.

I took a chair and sat down.

Doctor: I tend to think that he is in a near-death experience.

Me: Can you explain further?

Doctor: It is an unusual experience taking place on the brink of death and recounted by a person on recovery, typically an out-of-body experience or a vision of a tunnel of light. Right now he is between life and death.

Me: That sounds not promising.

Doctor: People who are in a near-death experience can hear and some can see what's happening around them, if you talk to him he will hear you and that might make him come back.

Me: You think so?

Him: Yes but that's my theory, although other people don't believe in it.

He looked at his wrist watch

Him: i have to go.

Me: Okay thank you Doctor.

The doctor left.

Was the doctor right? If i talk to him would he come back?

I took his hand.

Me: Hey its me, can you hear me?

He was laying still not moving,not even a twitch.

Me: i know that you and i had a fight before all of this happened, I'm sorry i don't know what got into me, maybe if i was there maybe you wasn't gonna get in that car with Jamie maybe i could've stopped you somehow. Riley if you can hear me Please come back to us we need you,

me Tessa and the girls we need you.

I put his hand on my tummy.

Me: and our baby needs you.

I sat there for hours crying, until Jamie and her mother came in.

Jamie: Anny.

I wiped my tears.

Jamie's mom: we have to go

Me: i can't leave him

Jamie: You not leaving him, you have to go fetch Tessa and the girls you'll come back tomorrow and I'll be here so long I'll call you if there's any changes.

Me: What time is it?

Jamie: 01:00

I stood up and kissed him on his forehead then Jamie's mom and i walked out. We got to her car and drove to the Penthouse to get the girls,

Tessa opened the door for us and hugged me i cried on her shoulder and so did she, Jamie's mom was at the verge of crying too.

Tessa: How is he?

Me: His in a very critical state.

Tessa: i have been praying he has to be fine.

Jamie's mom: I've been praying too.

Me: Tessa this is..

Jamie's mom: Joy

Me: and Joy this is Tessa Riley's mother.

Joy: It's nice to meet you.

Tessa: It's a pleasure to meet you too.

Me: we have to go we'll be staying with Joy for a while where are the girls?

Tessa: they sleeping, and Joy thank you for opening your home to us

Joy: You welcome.

We walked upstairs to get the girls they were sleeping, i woke them up while Tessa and Joy packed their clothes.

Palesa: what's happening?

Me: We moving in with Joy again

Palesa: Why?

Me: Uncle Riley got shot his in hospital so whoever shot him might come after us.

Palesa: What? How is he?

Me: His in ICU

Palesa put her hands on her eyes

Palesa: He can't die, his the closest person i have to a father

Tessa came to hug her

Tessa: he won't die my angel.

Palesa was crying, mbali didn't know what was happening she was half asleep.

I also went and packed my clothes then we all went to the cars. Joy drove with the girls, and i drove with Tessa.

We got home and there were security guards at the gate, Jennifer and Brad organized them for us. Joy slept with the girls and i slept with Tessa. Tessa and i prayed for long hours before sleeping.....time passed with Riley still In ICU it was now a month, Jamie was back at home and recovering, i was always at the hospital, Jennifer and Brad found nothing on Jack but they kept a close eye on him. I woke up in the morning was a Monday bathe and ate breakfast, Jamie came to the kitchen he wasn't on a wheelchair anymore she was walking with crutches.

Her: Morning

Me: Hey

Her: How are you?

Me: I'm hanging in there

Her: What are your plans for today?

Me: hospital and hospital
you?

Her: the crew and i we meeting later today we
still gonna hunt down whoever did this.

Me: why don't you let Brad and Jennifer handle
it you still have to recover

Jamie: They doing slow it's been a month now

Me: is the anything else you know about the
shooter can you recognise their voice? What
were they wearing?

Jamie: The person didn't say a word but they
were wearing all black

Me: i wonder who it is.

Jamie: whoever they are I'll find them.

I finished eating kissed Jamie on the cheek and
walked out to my car. I first drove to see my Dr,
Dr Robbin. I got there and she did a checkup the

baby was fine i was now 6 months pregnant, my baby is strong it's amazing that she's still alive after all this stress I've been under. When i was done at Dr Robbin's surgery i drove straight to the hospital. The guards were still there and Riley was still in ICU, not moving not even a sign that his gonna get better. I was due to give birth in 4 months time and i wanted him to see his daughter to actually be there when I'm giving birth. I held his hand and talked to him as always told him that im 6 months pregnant now and that i need him to come back. I usually visit him from 10am-20:00 the nurses and doctors knew me by now. Today i left at 22:00 instead of 20:00,i walked to the basement parking and there weren't alot of cars. I walked up to my car and my door was slightly open, that was weird because i locked it then i felt a gun on my head. Voice: If you scream I'll kill you,now turn around slowly.

I turned around and it was the same person that

Jamie said shot Riley, the person was wearing all black and a mask.

Me: Who are you and what do you want from us?

Person: How is Riley?

Me: His in ICU

Person: i thought he be dead by now.

The person's voice was a bit scratchy and their breathing was weird it was as if like they had a whooping cough because their chest made a sound when they were breathing, and sounded like they struggling to breath

Me: Who are you and what do you want from us?

Her: Revenge

Me: What Revenge?

Then i heard Jack's voice and he showed up behind the car

Jack: Revenge of what Riley did!

Me: i shouldve known it's you

Him: He brought Tessa into S.A and thought i wouldn't find out.

I kept quiet.

Him: And you, you the one who had a big mouth and told him about his mother and i told you not to say anything! Now look you have put a lot of your loved ones in danger! I'm gonna kill all of you one by one starting with you then your sisters!

Me: Stay away from my sisters!

Him: if i don't you'll do what? Riley betrayed me all along he was a blood his a thug and he never told me! I hope he doesn't make it out of that coma.

He put his hand on the shooter's shoulder

Jack: Make sure this one dies darling she shouldn't even make it to ICU

Then he started walking away, i wish someone could kill this man already!

I saw that the person had the black bandana wrapped on their wrist, who is betraying the bloods like this?

Me: You a blood?

Person: Was.

Me: Who are you? Are you Jennifer?

Person: No

Me: Brad?

Person: No

Me: Jamie?

Person: No.

Me: Then who are you?

Person: There's one person you haven't mentioned

Who was the other blood? Can it be? No it can't be Gina she's dead!

Me: Gina?

She took off her mask

Gina: Hello Anny.

Me: No this can't be happening you dead! I saw you laying there lifeless!

She had a small pipe thing on her throat that helped her breath.

Her: that's what we wanted everyone to think

Me: but why Gina? Why would you betray the bloods like this? And why would wanna kill your own brother!

for Jack?

Gina: Soo many questions and no answers!

I wonder what was Gina's motive and why did she make an alliance with Jack!

Rate (12 Ratings)

: PART 40 LOVE KNOWS NO COLORS

I looked at Gina like wtf.

She lowered her gun.

Her: Relax I'm not gonna do you no harm

Me: Gina why?

Her: i can't explain now can we meet
somewhere tomorrow

Me: We can meet at my Penthouse at 8am

Her: Okay and it's good to see you Anny

Me: i wish i can say the same.

She smiled and went to her bike.

There were soo many questions that needed to
be answered. I got into my car and checked if
she didn't do anything to it and at least she

didn't. I took out my phone and called Jamie while driving.

Jamie: Hello

Me: Jamie i know who the shooter is..

Jamie: Who is it?

Me: This is gonna shock you probably to death

Jamie: Talk

Me: It's Gina

Jamie didn't say anything

Me: Jamie are you still there?

Jamie: Gina Is dead!

Me: That's what we all thought, look call the crew and meet Me at that Diner that's next to the filling station.

Jamie: Okay.

I drove to the diner. I got there and ordered a waffle then waited for the crew. They came in

after some few hours.

Jennifer: Hey

Me: Hi

Brad: what's this i hear about Gina coming back from the dead?

Me: She was never dead! She pulled a gun on me at the hospital parking she was with Jack she has formed a strong alliance with Jack, she's the one who shot Riley.

Jamie: This makes no sense why would Gina betray the bloods!

Me: She said that we should meet at the Penthouse Tomorrow and i want you guys there

Brad: we'll be there, i wanna hear her story.

This was getting too much for Jamie she stood up.

Jamie: can i be excused Please

She walked out.

Jennifer: i cannot believe that Gina betrayed us like this.

Me: i can't believe she's alive!

Brad: What's happening with the bloods? Our crew is just getting messed up.

Jennifer: indeed we becoming two different groups.

Brad: How are we even gonna tell Riley that Gina is the one who almost killed him.

Jennifer: i still don't understand her motive.

Me: She must have a good enough reason,guys look i have to go I'll see you tomorrow.

They stood up and hugged me then we went our separate ways. I drove home. I got there and everyone was watching TV, but Jamie was not around.

Me: Good evening everyone

Tessa: Evening Anny

Palesa: Hey

Joy: evening

Me: Where is Jamie?

Joy: She said she was going to meet with you

Me: ohw ya

Tessa: How is Riley?

Me: Still no improvement

Palesa: It's been a month now.

Tessa: we should keep on praying.

Me: excuse me i wanna take a bath.

I went to bath still couldn't believe that Gina almost took Riley away from me, i couldn't tell Tessa yet about Gina.

After bathing i went to put on my pjs and got in bed it was 00:00am. It was hard sleeping i wanted it to be 8am Already. Tessa came to bed prayed then slept, i fell asleep too. I woke up at 2am with my baby kicking Me hard and a

bit hungry, i went to the kitchen to make something to eat. There was still leftovers it was chops, mash potatoes with gravy, peas, and i fried bacon to add on top of that dish. Jamie came in while i was eating looked like she's been drinking.

Me: Where you coming from?

Her: Just went out for a drive.

She sat opposite me.

Jamie: i saw Gina at Jack's house

Me: You went to Jack's house?

Her: Yes wanted to see her.

Jamie must have a death wish

Me: You went inside?

Her: Yes!

Me: Gosh Jamie are you out of your mind? Jack would've killed you!

Her: but he didn't did he? I'm still Alive!

shouting

She was angry but i don't blame her though i mean I'd also be mad if Riley could betray me like that.

Her: I'm sorry

Me: No need to be, I'd also react the same way if someone i loved betrayed me like that

Jamie: She couldn't even explain herself all she could say is "Jamie you have to go before Jack sees you"

Me: She surprised us with what she did.

Jamie: let me go and sleep I'll see you tomorrow.

Me: Night.

I ate and when i was done i went to bed i set an alarm clock....i woke up at 6am and bathe, when i was finished i went to wake Jamie up too.

She also bathe and we left, we took my car. We

got to The Penthouse Brad and Jen were already there we all went inside.

Me: When did you guys arrive?

Jen: 07:30

Brad: What time is she gonna be here?.

Me: 08:00

Brad: It's 08:05

Me: she's gonna be here let's be patient.

We waited and waited till we gave up it was already 10am and just as we were about to leave she showed up, Brad and Jen were shocked.

She looked at us and smiled..

Gina: It's good to see the crew again..

We all kept quiet.

Gina: Hi Jamie.

Jamie didn't even look at her.

She saw the bandana around my neck and on my wrist.

Her: You a blood now?

Me: Yes i joined the crew to replace you.

She looked down all ashamed

Gina: I'm sure you guys have a lot of questions.

Jennifer: You have no idea

Gina: Let's all sit down I'll tell you guys everything..

Me: Before we sit down there's one thing I wanna do..

I went up to Gina and punched her very hard that my hand was even painful, Jen held me back.

Me: That's for shooting my boyfriend! You lucky I'm not putting a bullet through you.

Jen: Calm down

Gina: It's okay Jen i deserve it.

She put her hand when i punched her.

Brad: Let's all sit down.

We all sat down except for Jamie, she looked soo angry.

Gina: i know you guys thought that I was dead but I'm not. What happened is that i did commit suicide i was in hospital but When Jack told everyone that im dead i wasn't dead he had shifted me to the best hospital in America, the specialists tried their best to keep me alive and they succeeded i even had a surgery.

She showed us her scar on her head but it was fading away now.

Her: that's why i have short hair now. When i was starting to get better Jack came to me and told me how he was God and saved my life. He told me that ill have to pay him for what he has done for me.

Me: What did he want from you?

Gina: he found out about the bloods and how Riley is bringing our mother back from Germany to South Africa, he also found out about Anny and Riley being in a relationship. He told me that if I don't form an alliance with him then he will send all of you to jail for a long time and that he would kill my mother and your sister's too Anny, and your mom Jamie.

I couldn't let that happen that's when i agreed to form an alliance with him, to save the bloods..

Jamie hit the table.

Jamie: Bullshit!! Don't use that as an excuse! You betrayed us Gina you almost killed Riley and now you come to us with this shit and you expect us to believe you?

Gina: i am being for real Jamie! Look guys i am loyal to the bloods!

Brad: You almost killed one of us, you almost killed the leader of the bloods!

Gina: He is my brother don't you think that I don't feel bad enough already?

Me: Did you have to shoot him 5times?

Her: i had to make it look real so That Jack doesn't suspect anything!

I didn't believe a thing Gina was Saying.

Jennifer: You could've told us about Jack we would've taken him out instead of you betraying us like that!

Gina: Jack is a dangerous man you guys haven't seen nothing yet.

Brad: We also dangerous we the bloods!

Gina: Look i know how we can bring Jack down. In a few months time his shipping Gold and diamonds distributing them overseas selling them to the highest bidder. That merchandise is worth 60million/70million dollars that's equivalent to +-600/700 Million rands. If we can

plan this heist good we rich we take that from him and distribute the merchandise overseas we get the cash and split it then we kill Jack!

Jamie: Why should we trust you?

Gina: i know it's hard for you guys to trust me but you don't have to give me the answer right now you can think about it, but know that we don't have time we have less than 6 months, i have to go before Jack becomes suspicious.

She stood up and went.

Me: i don't trust that bitch!

Jen: i don't trust her either.

Brad: And we can't make such a decision on our own we need to inform The Sniper..

Me: Speaking of the Sniper I'm late i have to go and see him.

I stood up and hugged everyone goodbye. I went to my car and drove to the hospital, i found a nurse in Riley's ward.

Me: Morning

Nurse: Morning how are you and the baby doing today?

Me: we are fine just bothered by the fact that her father doesn't wanna wake up.

Nurse: Don't give up on him.

Me: I'm losing hope Nurse

Her: His still breathing that should give you hope enough

Me: It's been a month now

Nurse: i know people who stay in a coma for many years.

Me: does he even look like his gonna make it?

Nurse: It's hard to tell especially because his Still the same.

That was disappointing..

Nurse: i have to go I'll see you later

Me: Okay

She went out.

I sat next to him.

Me: Why don't you wanna wake up? It's been a while now, are you even gonna wake up?

I was even getting emotional.

Me: i need you, there's a lot happening.

I was now crying and holding his hand while looking down, then i felt his hand moving.

I looked at him and his eyes were half opened i stood up and called the doctor the doctor came in rushing and was shining a light in his eyes then looked at him and looked at me.

Doctor: Are you sure his hand moved?

Me: Yes doctor are you saying I'm seeing things?

Doctor: No, i think it was just the involuntary movement of muscles it happens alot to people who are in a coma.

Me: so we back to square one?

Him: I'm afraid so.

I was devastated i couldn't take this anymore i walked out to my car all crying, there's no use busy going to see him if his not gonna wake up..... Since from then i never visited him months passed he was still in a coma 2months had passed now and i was 8 months pregnant, Tessa and the girls would go to see him but i didn't why should i if his not gonna be there for his daughter's birth, plus I'm close to giving birth i wanted nothing to stress me. One morning i woke up bathe and went to the kitchen to have breakfast, Jamie came in she had recovered now from the accident.

Jamie: Hey

Me: Hi

Jamie: You should cut out on the bacon look how big you are i can't even see your neck

I took an Apple from the table and threw it at her.

Her: I'm joking but you are big though.

Me: why you concerned about my weight ain't like you fuckin me

She laughed.

Her: You due in a month ain't you nervous?

Me: What kind of a question is that obviously I'm nervous..

Her: You shouldn't be we gonna be there for you.

Me: i know, i wish Riley could be there too

Jamie : me and the crew we gonna see him this morning don't you wanna come?

Me: No..

Jamie: Anny come on.

Me: No Jamie come off! I can't keep on seeing him like that it kills me inside and i don't want any stress I'm close to giving birth!

She didn't say anything my phone beeped and it was a message from a number i didn't recognise and it read "meet me at the diner in an hours time we need to talk-Gina"

I haven't spoken to Gina ever since that day she explained herself.

Jamie: Whose that?

Me: Dr Robbin she wants to see me

I couldn't tell Jamie that it's Gina she hated her.

Jamie: Want me to go with you?

Me: Nah I'll be okay she's just gonna give me tips about giving birth.

Her: Okay if anything serious comes up call me

Me: i will.

I took my keys and drove to the diner, this time she wasn't late. She tried to hug me when i made my way to her but i pushed her back a bit and sat down.

Her: I missed this place we used to come here me and the crew.

I gave her a serious face.

Her: You look good the pregnancy is treating you well..

Me: I'm sure we not here to talk about my pregnancy.

Her: We used to be tight Anny..

Me: used to be that's past tense.

Gina: You never gonna forgive me for what i did?

Me: Never! my man is laying at the hospital because of you, his gonna miss his daughter's birth next month because of you! *shouting*

People were looking at us.

Her: Anny I'm sorry i didn't me..

Me: Really Gina? You sorry?

Her: Calm down! What you doing is not good for the baby.

I was very mad i stood up

Me: You know what don't fucken call me or send me any retarded message i never wanna see you ever again!

I stood up and walked to my car. I drove to the Penthouse, went upstairs to our bedroom and sat on the bed. I looked around and saw Riley's picture on the dressing table i stood up and went to take it then laid in bed put it close to my chest and cried, i cried till i passed out..... I was woken up by my phone ringing and it was Jamie

Me: Hello

Jamie: Anny I've been trying to get hold of you.

Me: Why what's wrong?

Her: Can you come to the hospital it's Riley

Me: What about Riley?

Her: Just come.

She hung up, i wonder what happened to Riley

this people are gonna send me to early labour.

I went to my car and drove to the hospital, i got there and rushed to his ward, when i was at the door i dropped my keys and my phone on the floor i put my hand over my mouth with tears falling, Riley was awake and sitting leaning on the pillows with his back.

The whole crew was there, he didn't look 100% Ayt but he was awake, he looked at me and smiled then stretched out his hand to me, i went up to him and hugged him all crying.

Me: Don't ever scare me like that ever again!

Him: I'm sorry...

He was wiping my tears.

Me: i didn't think you was ever gonna wake up

Him: Are you crazy? I wasn't gonna miss my Daughter's birth.

I kissed him and the crew started clearing their throats.

Me: What? I missed him

Jen: Yall can do that when we gone..

I just smiled.

Riley: i hope you guys have good news for me, i know you have found the dog that did this to me.

We all kept quiet and looked at each other,Riley was getting upset.

Riley: Can someone please fucken tell me that the dog that did this to me is fucken 6feet under!

This is gonna be hard how do we tell him that the dog is his sister!

[06/17, 19:08] Ron: PART 41 LOVE KNOWS NO COLOR

I passed Riley his oxygen because he was

struggling to breath, he put it for 5min then after took it off.

Riley: What are you guys not telling me?

Brad: It's just that we don't know how to tell you this.

Riley: Just out with it man.

Brad: It's Gina who shot you.

Riley looked at Brad then laughed.

Riley: You guys are fuckin with Me Right?

We all had serious facial expressions.

Jamie: Gina didn't die Apparently Jack saved her life so that he could make her his puppet.

Jennifer: She's working for Jack

Me: But she still stands on her word that she's loyal to the bloods, she said that she can help us Bring Jack down before Jack brings us down.

Riley: If i didn't know What Jack Is capable off I'd say you guys are lying right now.

Jamie: We were all shocked

Riley: So Gina Is the one who shot me?

Me: I'm afraid yes.

He looked down all shaking his head

Brad: So what's the plan?

Riley: Can yall give me some space

We all looked at each other

Riley: Yall know i don't like repeating myself.

We all walked out wondering what Riley was thinking.

Jen: What do you guys think his gonna say?

Brad: More like what his gonna do

Jamie: Riley is unpredictable

Brad: i won't be surprised if he says we should kill her

Me: He can't kill her, it's his sister

They all looked at me.

Me: Okay He might.

Jamie: This is just complicated

Me: Leme go back to him maybe he will tell me about his plan

Jen: You will inform us about what his planning to do we can't go back in I doubt he needs company

Me: Okay I'll call you guys.

They all hugged me and left. I walked back into his ward.

Me: Can i come in?

He nodded yes.

I went in pulled up a chair and sat down.

Him: You look good

Me: Thank you

Him: No I'm for real this Pregnancy is making you look good

I blushed

Me: So you don't think that im fat?

Him: Nah I'm over that.

Me: That's good to hear

Him: Thank you

Me: For what?

Him: for not Killing my baby

Me: i don't understand

Him: i can only imagine the stress you have been under and that could have easily given you a miscarriage but you didn't let anything affect you. You one strong woman Anathi And that's the reason why i love you soo much.

That was making me emotional

Me: Wow you gonna make me cry

Him: I promise that from now on I'll never put you through something like this ever again.

The doctor walked in while he was still telling me sweet nothings.

Doctor: It's good to have you back Mr Muller you have been in a coma for too long

Him: it will take more than a few bullets from an amateur shooter to kill me

Doctor : so you know who shot you?

Riley: Yes

Doctor: then you should inform the police.

Riley: Naa there's nothing that the police can do for me that i cannot do for myself.

Doctor: What do you mean by that?

Riley: Nothing you would understand, anyway can i go home tomorrow?

He said that while putting the oxygen back on his mouth

Doctor: You've just came out of a coma, you not strong enough to go home.

Riley: I know my health better than you do.

Doctor: i cannot allow you to go, your wounds haven't even healed if something goes wrong you can die

Riley: I've been through worse Doc

Doctor: I'm not allowing you to go home

Riley: You forgetting one thing.

Doctor: What's that?

Riley: I'm not asking you I'm telling you.

Me: Riley..

He gave me the hand Asnt like bitch shut up I'm talking

Doctor: You can't go home you not strong enough to breath on your own you constantly need the oxygen to open up your chest when the muscles close.

Riley: I'll take it home with me

Doctor: But Mr Muller...

Riley was starting to get pissed.

Riley: Eyy this is not open for discussion boet!

The doctor saw that he wasn't gonna win here.

Doctor: Okay fine i will discharge you tomorrow but just know that if anything goes wrong you would've brought it on yourself.

Riley: Yeah whatever get out of my ward and come back tomorrow with the discharge forms.

The doctor went out.

I gave him a straight face.

Him: What?

Me: You gotta learn how to talk to people

Him: i do know how to talk to people.

Me: Yeah right.

Him: Stop whining and come give me a kiss.

I went up to him and gave him a kiss.

That kiss felt good

Him: I missed that

Me: Really?

He looked at my big cleavage with those sexy eyes of his, then went up and looked at my lips.

Him: We have a lot of catching up to do

Me: You very naughty.

He pulled me closer again and kissed me.

The nurse came in while we were kissing and cleared her throat.

I pulled out and sat down.

Him: Why did you stop?

Me: The nurse

Him: What about the nurse?

I can't believe this guy right now.

Nurse: It's Time to take your pills.

Riley: i don't pop pills

Nurse: What is that?

Riley: let me try to explain it in a way that you'll understand because i can see that you very slow, i'ma forgive you for that.

What was wrong with Riley mara it's like his a totally different person.

Nurse: Well you don't have a choice.

Riley took the pills and drank.

Riley: Happy now?

Nurse: I'm thrilled

Riley: As if like drinking my pills will increase your salary

Nurse: You one hell of a patient

Riley: hell is my second home!

Me: i apologise for his behaviour Sister.

His behaviour was making me to be embarrassed.

Me: It's like being in ICU changed him

Nurse: now i wish that you could've died.

Riley: That statement won't get you to heaven.

The nurse left busy clicking her tongue, Riley was Laughing, i put my hand on my forehead all looking down feeling so embarrassed.

Him: Stop it you know i was arrogant when you dated me!

Me: i didn't know, i thought you was this sweet white boy

Him: I'm not a candy floss you can't regard me as Being sweet.

Me: Do you think that you ready to go home though?

Him: Yes i just wanna be with my family i miss you and the girls,and we have to move into the new house.

Me: Ya we been cramping Jamie's house

Riley: You been living with Jamie?

Me: Yes since you got shot we were scared that the shooter might come after us before we found out it was Gina.

He kept quiet and clenched his teeth.

Me: What you gonna do to Her?

Riley: Nothing

Okay that was a first.

Me: uhm okay

Him: She should just stay away from me and my family.

That was surprising for Riley not to act i guess he loves his sister.

I didn't leave i just stayed with him and slept in the hospital, we squeezed in his small bed but it was sweet i was just happy that his back. We woke up in the morning the doctor came with the discharge forms he signed, i called Jamie to bring him clean clothes, and she showed up after some few hours Riley showered and we

went. He was still in a vulnerable state, was on a wheelchair with an oxygen on the side, the doctor said it will take him a while to actually be able to breath on his own.

We went out for breakfast me, him and Jamie, then we went to Jamie's house to fetch our things the girls were at school. Tessa was so happy to see him she was praising the Lord crying and making noise. We took our clothes and the girls clothes and drove to our new house, me, him, and Tessa i was the one driving. We got to The house and Tessa liked the it, our bedroom was done, Riley decided to rest a lil all this travelling made him tired. I bathe then went to chill with Tessa we were just sitting at the garden and admiring the view that i decided to tell her about Gina, i mean it was time.

Tessa: i like this house it's beautiful

Me: Yes it's very beautiful

Tessa: and the view

Me: Ya, uhm Tessa i have to tell you something
She put down her glass that had juice.

Her: You look serious what's wrong?

Me: Gina is alive.

She looked at me very shocked.

Tessa: Gina is what?

Me: Alive she didn't die, Jack performed some miracle and got her the best medical service ever! Jack saved the day as always.

She put her hands on face with a bit of tears in her eyes.

Tessa: My daughter is alive..i have to see her, i have to go and see her.

Me: What? No Jack will skin you alive

Tessa: When can i see her? Because i really have to see her life has given me a chance to reunite with my daughter and I'm not gonna mess it up

Me: I'll make a plan because i see how much it means to you but for now you need to lay low for Jack not to find out where you are

She agreed to that..... Days passed with Riley recovering he was walking on his own without a wheelchair the girls were always by his side thankful that he made it, he was still having problems with breathing but at least he was off the oxygen, and went to the doctor often for a check up, and me i couldn't wait to give birth. Tessa was busy forcing me to call Gina and set up a meeting so i sent her a message inviting her for dinner,she accepted... it was a Saturday morning when Tessa an i were busy cleaning the house.

Me: do you think it's good that we invited Gina? I mean after the shooting situation.

Tessa : That's why she has to come so that she can make peace with her brother.

I really had hope that Gina and Riley will make

peace because Riley has been laid back ever since the shooting seems like it made him a better person. Riley was not around that Saturday he went out with Jamie and the crew to discuss a few things i was not allowed to be part of it because of my pregnancy. Tessa and i finished cleaning very late because i was having a bit of cramps that i was ignoring. They were getting stronger that i decided to sit on the couch and relax. Gina came early while Tessa was still preparing dinner she texted me that she's at the door, i looked at Tessa who was very nervous when i told her. I went and opened the door.

Me: Hey

Her: Hi

I invited her in and gave her a hug.

Me: Come and meet your mom

Her: Im nervous

Me: So is she

Her eyes met up with Tessa's eyes then there was silence between them and tears started to fall, they went and hugged each other all crying, i cried too.

Tessa: Ohh Gina! I'm so Glad to see you, look how grown you are

Gina: It's good to see you too mom

Tessa: i knew that i was gonna see you again, i never lost hope..

Gina was smiling with tears in her eyes. Gina and Tessa looked soo much alike you'd swear they were twins.

Tessa: I'm sorry i never protected you from Jack, I'm your mother i shouldve...

Gina: It's not your fault mama..

Me: Can we finish cooking before you guys make me cry a river.

We all got back into Preparing dinner.

Tessa was busy telling me to sit down because of my cramps but i needed to keep busy.

Gina: How is Riley?

Tessa: His doing good you actually missed him, he was just here

Gina: That's good to hear.

I didn't tell her that Riley knew about the shooting. The girls were not joining us for dinner they were at Jamie's place, they loved Joy with all their hearts. We sat down at the table to eat. My cramps were getting worse every 5min. I didn't wanna worry Gina and Tessa most of all i didn't wanna break off their reunion so i decided to be brave, but Aikhona shame who was i kidding i was in pain.

Tessa: Are you okay dear?

Me: Yes I'm fine let's eat.

I tried eating but nope shit was painful, i can't

give birth now im 8 months and 3 weeks pregnant,i stood up to get water and the cramps were getting worse i dropped the glass and screamed.

Tessa rushed to me.

Me: Tessa what's happening to me?

Tessa: i think you are having labour pains.

Me: It's painful..

Tessa: I know Darling let's get you to a hospital.

Gina took her keys and put my hand around her shoulder to help me walk to the door.

Gina: we almost to the door just keep on walking.

we walked to the door and opened it, Riley and Jamie were standing there, looked like they were having a hilarious conversation because they were all laughing, but as soon as Riley saw Gina his facial expression changed they both stared at each other with Gina's eyes full of fear

and Riley's eyes full of Anger, i didn't have time for this drama i wanted to get to the hospital.

Save

Rate (32 Ratings)

[06/17, 19:10] Ron: PART 42 LOVE KNOWS NO COLORS

****Part 42****

I know that I'm supposed to be happy but Aii this was a big decision.

Jamie: That was a big bomb he dropped on us.

Jen: He can't do that!

Jamie: he can do anything his the Sniper!

Jen: well tough luck I'm not buying it! This black bandana represents death! Means you a blood till you die! Were is he?

Jen attempted to go upstairs.

Me: Don't go upstairs mad like that yall gonna have a problem he doesn't want no shit around his daughter.

Jen: i blame you Anathi! You the reason this is happening!

Me: What!

Jen: You changed him!

Riley came down alone this time.

Riley: Don't yell at my wife!

Jen: No sniper you cannot do this!

Riley: i can and i did! I brought this group together and i can break it!

Jen: No!!!!

Brad: Riley is right...

Jen looked at Brad like she's gonna kill him.

Brad: the bloods have to break up. A lot of shit is happening we turning on each it's only a matter of time until we actually kill each other.

Jamie: That's right man.

Jen sat down crying.

Jen: The bloods is all i know what am i gonna do after this? I don't have a job.

Brad: that's why I've been thinking.

We all looked at him.

Brad: Let's all do this Gina heist and then we can separate rich!

Jamie: that's not a bad idea you owe us that much Riley.

Riley looked at them for a while.

Riley: we can do the Gina heist plus i want to Revenge Jack. Jamie and Jennifer you can go

and get more info from Gina, Brad and i we gonna plan this heist perfectly,if we gonna do this then we gonna do this right,let's get to work.

Me: What about me?

Riley: You ain't doing ish you not part of this operation!

Me: I am a blood i wanna do this heist!

Riley: If Andrea is gonna lose a parent then she's gonna lose one parent not both.

Me: But Riley..

Riley: No Snuggle bunny, if you can't do it for me then do it for her.

His right though i don't want my baby losing both parents..... The crew planned this heist for two weeks they hardly slept Gina was still being held hostage and Jack had a tight security around his merchandise Riley needed more people he contacted their superintendent who gave up 10 cops for this operation,the plan

was to get the merchandise before it gets to the ship and our people will transport the merchandise overseas, Brad, Jen, and Jamie agreed that they gonna transport it and decided that they gonna stay overseas since there's nothing left for them in S.A anymore but Jamie was gonna come back, and Riley instructed everyone not to touch Jack he wanna be the one that's gonna kill him!..... The day of the operation came Gina wasn't gonna join them i said my Goodbyes to Brad and Jennifer since i wasn't gonna see them anymore,Riley came to hug me and Andy.

Me: Make sure you come back home to us

Riley: i promise

Me: Andy still needs her father and i still need my fiancé.

He kissed me then after he kissed Andy.

Him: I'm coming back and when i come back we planning the most expensive wedding ever.

Me: I love you.

Him: i love you too.

They went out. This was big i prayed the whole day with Tessa that may God protect them even though their doing something illegal. Time passed and he wasn't back i was pacing through the kitchen floor they supposed to be back by now it's been long. I hope nothing bad happen. I was getting worried everyone was sleeping because it was late was around 00:00. I tried calling him but his phone was off, my heart was sore tears where falling. I wasn't planning on sleeping anytime soon and now it was 2am i can't give up hope now, then i heard the door opening and he came in, i was soo Thankful to God that he protected him, i ran up to him and hugged him while crying, and he was kissing me through those tears.

Him: It's all over, No more Jack no more of this thug life.

I smiled I couldn't believe it was all over. We went upstairs to Andy's room and she was sleeping peacefully we stood there looking at her, for the first time ever we gonna be a normal family.

*****2 Years later*****

The operation went well we got our money Through Jen and Brad we all got 100mill each and the rest was used to pay the cops and the superintendent, they got 5mill each. Okay i didn't get any cash cos i wasn't part of the operation. The superintendent made sure this doesn't come back to us he made the case disappear into thin air. Jen and Brad lived in Paris we Skype with them every now and then Jen was pregnant now and they were married, Jamie and Gina were reunited and Riley forgave his sister for Shooting him, those two never stayed in one place for a long time they travelled the world. Riley and i are yet still to get married and our little bundle of joy was 2 years

old now and Riley did buy her a lamborghini. Palesa was doing her matric now and planing on going overseas to study acting. Mbali was to start high school soon, Tessa was still living with us and she was a good Nanny to the girls and me i decided to go back to school i was getting my matric then after i wanted to study criminology, today i was writing my last paper which i studied hard for. Riley came to fetch me after writing.

Him: How did you write?

Me: Wasn't bad i hope i did good though.

Him: i know you'll do good.

He opened the door for me i went inside and he drove off.

Him: i have a surprise for you

Aii Riley and his surprises. We drove to some expensive and high class Club a division of the 40/40 Club.

Me: Ain't it early to be getting drunk?

Him: we celebrating that you done with exams..

We went inside to a private section and what I saw almost made my jaw drop the whole crew was there. We all hugged each other was happy to see them, Jen was still pregnant with a huge Diamond ring on her finger. Jamie and Gina looked very happy and madly in love they even had matching tattoos.

Me: Wow what are you guys doing here?

Gina: we came to see yall

Jen: and we have one last heist to do..

Me: i thought we were done with that life we have a lot of money guys we can't...

Jamie: Relax it's not illegal

Gina: our last heist is...

Me: Is?

Riley: We all going on vacation to Germany for a

month

Me: What?

Riley: Don't you wanna see where i was born?

Me: i do wanna see it's about time

Gina: How about we extend the vacation let's travel the world in 2 months?

Brad: I'm game.

Jen: same here, hope this baby won't come while we travelling

We all laughed

Riley got champagne and we all poured but Jen was gonna drink sprite with lime.

Jamie stood up and put her glass up in the air.

Jamie: a toast.

Gina: a toast to what?

Jamie: Long as my crew right then I'm alright.

Brad stood up put his glass up too

Brad: long as our women alright then we alright..

Gina: long as the drinks on Ice then we alright.

Jen: long as private flights then we alright.

Me: i don't know what to say

Riley: Just say anything.

Me: long as we living right then we alright.

Riley: Cause it's bloods over everything And we been alright.

We all had our glasses up on in the air.

My life was complicated at first i never thought that it would turn out like this one day, we all destined for happiness at some point no matter how bad we are or how good we are. God doesn't go by how many times you've sinned or did bad but if his bound to bless you then you will be blessed. I thank everyone who read my story my life is gonna be perfect from here on God has given me a 2nd chance to live right that's why I'm still Alive. Where i am right now is

where God wanted me to be that's why i ain't
died!

I am Anathi soon to be Muller and this was my
story

THE END